

# Paradise lost.

A  
POEM  
IN  
TEN BOOKS.

The Author *J. M.*

---

Licensed and Entred according  
to Order.

---

*L O N D O N*

Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker*  
under *Creed Church* neer *Aldgate*; And by  
*Robert Boulter* at the *Turk's Head* in *Bishopsgate-street*;  
And *Matthew Walker*, under *St. Dunstans Church*  
in *Fleet-street*, 1668.

Passive life

A

M E P

K

TEN BOOKS

IN A MONTH

BY JAMES THOMAS

OF OXFORD

A MONTH

BY JAMES THOMAS

2000



# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK I.

---



F Mans First Disobedience, and  
the Fruit  
Of that Forbidden Tree, whose  
mortal tast  
Brought Death into the World,  
and all our woe,  
With loss of *Eden*, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful Seat,  
Sing Heav'ly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of *Oreb*, or of *Sinai*, didst inspire  
That Shepherd, who first taught the chosen Seed,  
In the Beginning how the Heav'ns and Earth  
Rose out of *Chaos* : Or if *Sion* Hill  
Delight thee more, and *siloa's* Brook that flow'd  
Fast by the Oracle of God ; I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my adventurous Song,  
That with no middle flight intends to soar

A

Above

Above th' *Aonian* Mount, while it pursues  
 Things unattempted yet in Prose or Rhime.  
 And chiefly Thou O Spirit, that dost prefer  
 Before all Temples th' upright heart and pure,  
 Instruct me, for Thou know'st ; Thou from the first  
 20 Waft present, and with mighty wings outspread  
 Dove-like satst brooding on the vast Abyss  
 And mad'st it pregnant : What in me is dark  
 Illumine, what is low raise and support ;  
 That to the hight' of this great Argument  
 I may assert th' Eternal Providence,  
 And justifie the wayes of God to men.

Say first, for Heav'n hides nothing from thy view  
 Nor the deep Tract of Hell, say first what cause  
 Mov'd our Grand Parents in that happy State,  
 Favour'd of Heav'n so highly, to fall off  
 From their Creator, and transgress his Will  
 For one restraint, Lords of the World besides ?  
 Who first seduc'd them to that fowl revolt ?  
 Th' infernal Serpent ; he it was, whose guile  
 Stird up with Envy and Revenge, deceiv'd  
 The Mother of Mankinde, what time his Pride  
 Had cast him out from Heav'n, with all his Host  
 Of Rebel Angels, by whose aid aspiring  
 To set himself in Glory above his Peers,  
 He trusted to have equal'd the most High,  
 If he oppos'd ; and with ambitious aim  
 Against the Throne and Monarchy of God  
 Rais'd impious War in Heav'n and Battel proud  
 With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power  
 Hurld headlong flaming from th' Ethereal Skie  
 With hideous ruine and combustion down

To bottomless perdition, there to dwell  
In Adamantine Chains and penal Fire,  
Who durst defie th' Omnipotent to Arms.  
Nine times the Space that measures Day and Night 50  
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
Lay vanquisht, rowling in the fiery Gulfe  
Confounded though immortal : But his doom  
Reserv'd him to more wrath ; for now the thought  
Both of lost happiness and lasting pain  
Torments him ; round he throws his baleful eyes  
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay  
Mixt with obdurate pride and stedfast hate :  
At once as far as Angels kenn he views  
The dismal Situation waste and wilde, 60  
A Dungeon horrible, on all sides round  
As one great Furnace flain'd, yet from those flames  
No light, but rather darkness visible  
Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,  
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace  
And rest can never dwell, hope never comes  
That comes to all ; but torture without end  
Still urges, and a fiery Deluge, fed  
With ever-burning Sulphur unconsum'd :  
Such place Eternal Justice had prepar'd  
For those rebellious, here their Prison ordain'd  
In utter darkness, and their portion set  
As far remov'd from God and light of Heav'n  
As from the Center thrice to th' utmost Pole.  
O how unlike the place from whence they fell !  
There the companions of his fall, o'rewhelm'd  
With Floods and Whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
He soon discerns, and weltring by his side

80 One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
Long after known in *Palestine*, and nam'd  
*Eelzebub*. To whom th' Arch-Enemy,  
And thence in Heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words  
Breaking the horrid silence thus began.  
If thou bee & he ; But O how fall'n ! how chang'd  
From him, who in the happy Realms of Light  
Cloth'd with transcendent brightnes didst outshine  
Myriads though bright : If he whom mutual league,  
United thoughts and counsels, equal hope,  
And hazard in the Glorious Enterprize,  
50 Joynd with me once, now misery hath joynd  
In equal ruin : into what Pit thou seeit  
From what hight fal'n, so much the stronger prov'd  
He with his Thunder : and till then who knew  
The force of those dire Arms ? yet not for those  
Nor what the Potent Victor in his rage  
Can else inflict do I repent or change,  
Though chang'd in outward lustre ; that fixt mind  
And high disdain, from fence of injur'd merit,  
That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,  
100 And to the fierce contention brought along  
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd  
That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power oppos'd  
In dubious Battel on the Plains of Heav'n,  
And shook his throne. What thought the field be lost ?  
All is not lost ; the unconquerable Will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
And courage never to submit or yield :  
And what is else not to be overcome ?  
That Glory never shall his wrath or might

Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deifie his power  
Who from the terrors of this Arm so late  
Doubted his Empire, that were low indeed,  
That were an ignominy and shame beneath  
This downfall ; since by Fate the strength of Gods  
And this Empyreal substance cannot fail,  
Since through experience of this great event  
In Arms not worse, in foresight much advanc't,  
We may with more successful hope resolve  
To wage by force or guile eternal Warr  
Irreconcileable, to our grand Foe,  
Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy  
Sole reigning holds the Tyranny of Heav'n.

So spake th' Apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but rackt with deep desp'are :  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold Compeer.

O Prince, O Chief of many Throned Powers,  
That led th' imbatteild Seraphim to Warr  
Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds  
Fearless, endanger'd Heav'n's perpetual King ;  
And put to proof his high Supremacy,  
Whether upheld by strength, or Chance, or Fate,  
Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
That with sad overthrow and foul defeat  
Hath lost us Heav'n, and all this mighty Host  
In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
As far as Gods and Heav'nly Essences  
Can perish : for the mind and spirit remains  
Invincible, and vigour soon returns,  
Though all our Glory extinct, and happy state  
Here swallow'd up in endless misery.

120

130

140

But

But what if he our Conquerour, (whom I now  
Of force believe Almighty, since no less  
Then such could hav orepow'rd such force as ours)  
Have left us this our spirit and strength intire  
Strongly to suffer and support our pains,

That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,  
Or do him mightier service as his thralls

150 By right of Warr, what e're his busines be  
Here in the heart of Hell to work in Fire,  
Or do his Errands in the gloomy Deep ;  
What can it then avail though yet we feel  
Strength undiminisht, or eternal being  
To undergo eternal punishment ?

Whereto with speedy words th' Arch-fiend reply'd.

Fall'n Cherube, to be weak is miserable  
Doing or Suffering : but of this be sure,  
To do ought good never will be our task,

160 But ever to do ill our sole delight,  
As being the contrary to his high will  
Whom we resist. If then his Providence  
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil ;  
Which oft times may succeed, so as perhaps  
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
His inmost counsels from their destind aim.

But see the angry Victor hath recall'd  
His Ministers of vengeance and pursuit  
Back to the Gates of Heav'n : The Sulphurous Hail  
Shot after us in storm, oreblown hath laid  
The fiery Surge, that from the Precipice  
Of Heav'n receiv'd us falling, and the Thunder,  
Wing'd

Wing'd with red Lightning and impetuous rage,  
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
To bellow through the vast and boundless Deep.  
Let us not slip thi' occasion, whether scorn,  
Or satiate fury yield it from our Foe.

Seest thou yon dreary Plain, forlorn and wilde,  
The seat of desolation, veyd of light,  
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
From off the tossing of these fiery waves,  
There rest, if any rest can harbour there,  
And reassemblyng our afflicted Powers,  
Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
Our Enemy, our own losse how repair,  
How overcome this dire Calamity,  
What reinforcement we may gain from Hope,  
If not what resolution from desp'are.

Thus Satan talking to his neerer Mate  
With Head up-lift above the wave, and Eyes  
That sparkling blaz'd, his other Parts besides  
Prone on the Flood, extended long and large  
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
As whom the Fables name of monstrous size,  
Titanian, or Earth-born, that war'd on Jove,  
Briarios or Typhon, whom the Den  
By ancient *Tarsus* held, or that Sea-beast  
*Leviathan*, which God of all his works  
Created hugest that swim th' Ocean stream:  
Him haply slumbering on the *Nereus*, foam  
The Pilot of some small night-saunder'd Skiff,  
Deeming some Island, oft, as *Sea-men* tell,  
With fixed Anchor in his skaly rind.

180

190

200

Moors

Moors by his side under the Lee, while Night  
Invests the Sea, and wished Morn delayes :  
So stretcht out huge in length the Arch-fiend lay  
210 Chain'd on the burning Lake, nor ever thence  
Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will  
And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
That with reiterated crimes he might  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others, and enrag'd might see  
How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn  
On Man by him seduc't, but on himself  
220 Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd.  
Forthwith upright he rears from off the Pool  
His mighty Stature ; on each hand the flames  
Drivn backward slope their pointing spires, & crowld  
In billows, leave i'th' midst a horrid Vale.  
Then with expanded wings he stears his flight  
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky Air  
That felt unusual weight, till on dry Land  
He lights, if it were Land that ever burn'd  
With solid, as the Lake with liquid fire ;  
230 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force  
Of subterranean wind transports a Hill  
240 Torn from *Pelorus*, or the shatter'd side  
Of thundring *Etna*, whose combustible  
And fewel'd entrals thence conceiving Fire,  
Sublim'd with Mineral fury, aid the Winds,  
And leave a singed bottom all involv'd  
With stench and smoke. Such resting found the sole  
Of unblest feet. *Him followed his next Mate,*  
Both

Both glorying to have scap't the *stygian* flood  
As Gods, and by their own recover'd strength,  
Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

240

Is this the Region, this the Soil, the Clime,  
Said then the lost Arch Angel, this the seat  
That we must change for Heav'n; this mournful  
For that celestial light? Be it so, since hee (gloom  
Who now is Sovran can dispose and bid  
What shall be right: fardest from him is best  
Whom reason hath equald, force hath made su-  
Above his equals. Farewel happy Fields (pream  
Where Joy for ever dwells: Hail horrores, hail  
Infernal world, and thou profoundest Hell  
Receive thy new Possessor: One who brings  
A mind not to be chang'd by Place or Time.  
The mind is its own place, and in it self  
Can make a Heav'n of Hell, a Hell of Heav'n.  
What matter where, if I be still the same,  
And what I should be, all but less then hee  
Whom Thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built  
Here for his envy, will not drive us hence:  
Here we may reign secure, and in my choyce  
To reign is worth ambition though in Hell:  
Better to reign in Hell, then serve in Heav'n.  
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
Th' associates and copartners of our losse  
Lye thus astonisht on th' oblivious Pool,  
And call them not to share with us their part  
In this unhappy Mansion, or once more  
With rallied Arms to try what may be yet  
Regaind in Heav'n, or what more lost in Hell?

250

260

270

So *satan* spake, and him *Beelzebub*  
Thus answer'd. Leader of those Armies bright,  
Which but th' Omnipotent none could have foyl'd,  
If once they hear that voyce, their liveliest pledge  
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft  
In worst extreams, and on the perilous edge  
Of battel when it rag'd, in all assaults  
Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
New courage and revive, though now they lye  
280 Groveling and prostrate on yon Lake of Fire,  
As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,  
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth.

He scarce had ceas't when the superiour Fiend  
Was moving toward the shore; his ponderous shield  
Ethereal temper, mafly, large and round,  
Behind him cast; the broad circumference  
Hung on his shoulders like the Moon, whose Orb  
Through Optic Glass the *Tuscan* Artist views  
At Ev'ning from the top of *Fesole*,  
290 Or in *Valdarno*, to descry new Lands,  
Rivers or Mountains in her spotty Globe.  
His Spear, to equal which the tallest Pine  
Hewn on *Norwegian* hills, to be the Mast  
Of some great Admiral, were but a wand,  
He walkt with to support unfeasie steps  
Over the burning Maple, not like those steps  
On Heavens Azure, and the torrid Clime  
Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with Fire;  
Nathleſſ he so endur'd, till on the Beach  
300 Of that inflamed Sea, he stood and call'd  
His Legions, Angel Forms, who lay in ranks  
Thick as Autumnal Leaves that ſrow the Brooks  
In

In *Vallombrosa*, where th' *Etrurian* shades  
 High overarcht imbowr; or scatterd fedge  
 Afloat, when with fierce Winds *Orion* arm'd  
 Hath vext the Red-Sea Coast, whose waves ore-  
*Eusiris* and his *Membrian* Chivalrie, (threw  
 VVhile with perfidious hatred they pursu'd  
 The Sojourners of *Goshen*, who beheld  
 From the safe shore their floating Carkases  
 And broken Chariot VVheels, so thick bestrown  
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the Flood,  
 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow Deep  
 Of Hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,  
 Warriers, the Flowr of Heav'n, once yours, now lost,  
 If such astonishment as this can seize  
 Eternal spirits; or have ye chos'n this place  
 After the toyl of Battel to repose  
 Your wearied vertue, for the ease you find  
 To slumber here, as in the Vales of Heav'n?  
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
 To adore the Conquerour? who now beholds  
 Cherube and Seraph rowling in the Flood  
 With scatter'd Arms and Ensigns, till anon  
 His swift pursuers from Heav'n Gates discern  
 Th' advantage, and descending tread us down  
 Thus drooping, or with linked Thunderbolts  
 Transfix us to the bottom of this Gulfe.  
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n.

They heard, and were abasht, and up they sprung  
 Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch  
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.

310

320

330

Nor did they not perceive the evil plight  
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel ;  
 Yet to their Generals Voyce they soon obeyd  
 Innumerable. As when the potent Rod  
 Of *Amram's* Son in *Egypt's* evill day

340 Wav'd round the Coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud  
 Of *Locusts*, warping on the Eastern Wind,  
 That ore the Realm of impious *Pharaob* hung  
 Like Night, and darken'd all the Land of *Nile* :  
 So numberleis were those bad Angels seen  
 Hovering on wing under the Cope of Hell  
 'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding Fires ;  
 Till, as a signal giv'n, th' uplifted Spear  
 Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
 Thir course, in even ballance down they light

350 On the firm brimstone, and fill all the Plain ;  
 A multitude, like which the populous North  
 Pour'd never from her frozen loyns, to pass  
*Rhene* or the *Danaw*, when her barbarous Sons  
 Came like a Deluge on the South, and spread  
 Beneath *Gibraltar* to the *Lybian* sands.  
 Forthwith from every Squadron and each Band  
 The Heads and Leaders thither hast where stood  
 Their great Commander; Godlike shapes and forms  
 Excelling human, Princely Dignities,

360 And Powers that earst in Heaven sat on Thrones ;  
 Though of their Names in heav'nly Records now  
 Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd  
 By thir Rebellion, from the Books of Life.  
 Nor had they yet among the Sons of *Eve*  
 Got them new Names, till wandring ore the Earth,  
 Through Gods high sufferance for the tryal of man,

By

By falsities and lies the greatest part  
 Of Mankind they corrupted to forfake  
 God their Creator, and th' invisible  
 Glory of him, that made them, to transform  
 Ost to the Image of a Brute, adorn'd  
 With gay Religions full of Pomp and Gold,  
 And Devils to adore for Deities :

370

Then were they known to men by various Names,  
 And various Idols through the Heathen World.

Say, Muse, their Names then known, who first, who  
 Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery Couch, (last,  
 At thir great Emperors call, as next in worth  
 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
 While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof ?

380

The chief were those who from the Pit of Hell  
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
 Their Seats long after next the Seat of God,  
 Their Altars by his Altar, Gods ador'd  
 Among the Nations round, and durst abide

*Jehovab* thundring out of *Sion*, thron'd  
 Between the Cherubim ; yea, often plac'd  
 Within his Sanctuary it self their Shrines,  
 Abominations ; and with cursed things  
 His holy Rites, and solemn Feasts profan'd,  
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.

390

First *Moloch*, horrid King besmear'd with blood  
 Of human sacrifice, and parents tears,  
 Though for the noyse of Drums and Timbrels loud  
 Their childrens cries unheard, that past through fire  
 To his grim Idol. Him the *Ammonite*  
 Worshipt in *Rabba* and her watry Plain,  
 In *Argob* and in *Basam*, to the stream

Of

400 Of utmost *Arnon*. Nor content with such  
Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart  
Of *Solomon* he led by fraud to build  
His Temple right against the Temple of God  
On that opprobrious Hill, and made his Grove  
The pleasant Valley of *Hinnom*, *Tophet* thence  
And black *Gebenna* call'd, the Type of Hell.  
Next *Chemos*, th' obscene dread of *Moabs* Sons,  
From *Aroer* to *Nebo*, and the wild  
Of Southmost *Abarim* ; in *Hesebon*  
And *Heronaim*, *Seons* Realm, beyond  
410 The flowry Dale of *Sibma* clad with Vines,  
And *Eleale* to th' *Asphaltick* Pool.  
Per or his other Name, when he entic'd  
*Israel* in *Sittim* on their march from *Nile*  
To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
Yet thence his lustful Orgies he enlarg'd  
Even to that Hill of scandal, by the Grove  
Of *Moloch* homicide, lust hard by hate ;  
Till good *Josiah* drove them thence to Hell.  
With these came they, who from the bordring flood  
420 Of old *Euphrates* to the Brook that parts  
*Egypt* from *Syrian* ground, had general Names  
Of *Baalim* and *Astartoth*, those male,  
These Feminine. For Spirits when they please  
Can either Sex assume, or both ; so soft  
And uncompounded is their Essence pure,  
Not ti'd or manac'd with joyst or limb,  
Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
Like cumbrous flesh; but in what shape they choose  
Dilated or condens't, bright or obscure,  
430 Can execute their aerie purposes,

And

And works of love or enmity fulfill.  
 For those the Race of *Israel* oft forsook  
 Their living strength, and unfrequented left  
 His righteous Altar, bowing lowly down  
 To bestial Gods ; for which their heads as low  
 Bow'd down in Battel, sunk before the Spear  
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
 Came *Astoreth*, whom the *Phoenicians* call'd  
*Astarte*, Queen of Heav'n, with crescent Horns ;  
 To whose bright Image nightly by the Moon 440  
*Sidonian* Virgins paid their Vows and Songs,  
 In *Sion* also not unsung, where stood  
 Her Temple on th' offensive Mountain, built  
 By that uxorious King, whose heart though large,  
 Beguil'd by fair Idolatresses, fell  
 To Idols foul. *Thammuz* came next behind,  
 Whose annual wound in *Lebanon* allur'd  
 The *Syrian* Damsels to lament his fate  
 In amorous ditties all a Summers day,  
 While smooth *Adonis* from his native Rock 450  
 Ran purple to the Sea, suppos'd with blood  
 Of *Thammuz* yearly wounded : the Love-tale  
 Infected *Sions* daughters with like heat,  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred Porch  
*Ezekiel* saw, when by the Vision led  
 His eye survey'd the dark Idolatries  
 Of alienated *Judah*. Next came one  
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the Captive Ark  
 Maim'd his brute Image, head and hands lopt off  
 In his own Temple, on the grunzel hedge 460  
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his Worshippers :  
*Dagon* his Name, Sea Monster, upward Man  
 And

And downward Fish: yet had his Temple high  
Rear'd in *Azotus*, dreaded through the Coast  
Of *Palestine*, in *Gath* and *Ascalon*,  
And *Accaron* and *Gaza*'s frontier bounds.  
Him follow'd *Rimmon*, whose delightful Seat  
Was fair *Damascus*, on the fertil Banks  
Of *Abbana* and *Pharpar*, lucid streams.

470 He also against the house of God was bold:  
A Leper once he lost and gain'd a King,  
*Abar* his sottish Conquerour, whom he drew  
Gods Altar to disparage and displace  
For one of *Syrian* mode, whereon to burn  
His odious offrings, and adore the Gods  
Whom he had vanquisht. After these appear'd  
A crew who under Names of old Renown,  
*Osiris*, *Iiss*, *Orus* and their Train  
With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
480 Fanatic *Egypt* and her Priests, to seek  
Thir wandering Gods disguis'd in brutish forms  
Rather then human. Nor did *Israel* scape  
Th' infection when their borrow'd Gold compos'd  
The Calf in *Orch*: and the Rebel King  
Doubl'd that sin in *Bethel* and in *Dan*,  
Lik'ning his Maker to the Grazed Ox,  
*Jehovash*, who in one Night when he pass'd  
From *Egypt* marching, equal'd with one stroke  
Both her first born and all her bleating Gods.  
490 *Belial* came last, then whom a Spirit more lewd  
Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love  
Vice for it self. To him no Temple stood  
Or Altar smok'd; yet who more oft then he  
In Temples and at Altars, when the Priest  
With

Turns **Arbella**, as did **Ely's** Sons, who **fire**  
 With lust and violence the house of **God**.  
 In Courts and Palaces he also Reigns  
 And in luxurious Cities, where the noyse  
 Of riot ascends above thir loftiest Towns,  
 And injury and outrage. And when **Night**  
 Darkens the Streets, then **wander forth** the Sons  
 Of **Belial**, flown with insolence and **wipe**.  
 Witness the Streets of **Sodom**, and that **night**  
 In **Gath**, when hospitable **Dores**  
 Yielded thir **Mattos** to prevent worse **rape**.  
 These were the prime in order and in might;  
 The rest were long to tell, though far renowned,  
 Th' **Ionian** Gods, of **Javans** Issue held  
 Gods, yet confess later then **Heavn** and **Earth**.  
 Thir boasted Parents, **Titan** **Heavns** first born  
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seis'd  
 By younger **Saturn**, he from mightier **Jove**,  
 His own, and **Rhea's** Son like measure found;  
 So **short** usurping reign'd! there first in **Grec**  
 And **Ias** known, thence on the **Showy top**  
 Of cold **Olymp** full'd the middle **Air**.  
 Thir highest **Heavn**; or on the **Delbian** **Cliff**,  
 Or in **Dodona**, and through all the bounds  
 Of **Dotic** **Land**; or who with **Saturn** old  
 Fled over **Aars** to th' **Heptian** **Fields**,  
 And ore the **Celtic** **Coast** the utmost **Ind**.  
 All these and more came flocking, but with looks  
 Downcast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd  
 Obscuring lumps of joy, to have found **the** **chief**,  
**Noe** in **Arbella**, to have found themselves not lost  
 In loss, **himself**, which on his countenance cast

Like dismal hue; by he his woned pride  
Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
Semblance of worth not substance, gently rais'd  
530 Their fain'd courage, and dispel'd their fears.  
Then strake commands that at the warlike sound  
Of Trumpets, loud and Clarions be upread  
His mighty Standard; that proud hon'ur claim'd  
Azazel as his right, a Cherube tall:  
Who, forthwith from the glittering Staff unfurld  
Th' Imperial Ensign, which full high advanc'd  
Shon like a Meteor streaming to the Wind  
With Geminis and Golden lustre rich imblaz'd,  
Seraphic arms and Trophies: all the while  
540 Sónorous metal blowing Martial sounds:  
At which the universal Host upsent  
A shout that tore Hells Concave, and beyond  
Frighted the Reign of *Chaos* and old Night:  
All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
Ten thousand Banners rise into the Air  
With Orient Colours waving: with them rose  
A Forrest huge of Spears: and thronging Helves  
Appear'd, and ferried Shields in thick array  
Of depth immeasurable: Anon they move  
550 In perfect *Balance* to the *Dorian* mood  
Of Flutes and soft Recorders: such as  
To hight of noblest temper Hero's old  
Arming to Battel, and in stead of rage  
Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmoved,  
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat  
Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage  
With solemn touches, troubl'd thoughts and chase  
Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain

From

From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they  
 Breathing united force with fixed thought  
 Mov'd on in silence to fett Pipes that charm'd  
 560  
 Thir painful steps o're the burnt foyle ; and now  
 Advanc't in view they stand, a horrid Front  
 Of dreadful length and dazzling Arms, in guise  
 Of Warriors old with order'd Spear and Shield,  
 Awaiting what command thir mighty Chief  
 Had to impose ; He through the armed Files  
 Darts his experien't eye, and soon traverse  
 The whole Battalion views ; this order due,  
 570  
 Thir visages and stature as of Gods,  
 Thir number last he summs. And now his heart  
 Distends with pride, and hardning in his strength  
 Glories : For never since created man,  
 Met such imbodyed force, as nam'd with these  
 Could merit more then that small infantry  
 Warr'd on by Cranes : though all the Giant brood  
 Of Pblegra with th' Heroic Race were joyn'd  
 That fought at Theb's and Ilium, on each side  
 Mixt with auxilliar Gods ; and what resounds  
 In Fable or Romance of Ulbers Son  
 Begirt with British and Armoric Knights ;  
 580  
 And all who since, Baptiz'd or Infidel  
 Jousted in Asprasons or Montalbenz,  
 Dambes, or Marocco, or Trebisond,  
 Or whom Biftira sent from Afric shore  
 When Charlemain with all his Peorage fell  
 By Fourarabbia. Thus far these beyond  
 Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd  
 This dread Commander : he above the rest  
 In shape and gesture proudly eminent

Stood like a Tower, & his form had yet not lost  
All her Original brightness, nor appear'd less  
600  
Less then Arch Angel bright, and shi excess  
Of Glory obscur'd: As when the Sun now riseth  
Looks through the Horizontal misty Air  
Shorn of his Beams, or from behind the Moon  
In dim Eclipse, disastrous, twilight sheds W 30  
On half the Nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes Monarchs. Dark'd & so, yet shou  
600 Above them all the Arch Angel: but his face  
Deep scars of Thunder had immecht, and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under Browes  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate Pride  
Waiting revenge: cruel his eyes, but cast  
Signs of remorse, and passion to behold  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rasher  
( Far other once beheld in bliss, & condemn'd  
For ever now to have their los in pain,  
Millions of Spirits for his faults am'ret  
610 Of Heav'n, and from Eternal Splendors flung  
For his revolt, yet faithfull bow they knodg, & in  
Thir Glory wighord: As when Heavens Fire  
Hath scath'd the Forrest Oaks, or Mountain Pines,  
With singed top, their stately growth though bare  
Stands on the blasted Heath, & now prepar'd  
To speak; whereat their doubl'd Ranks they band  
From Wing to Wing, and half enclose him round  
With all his Peers: attention held them in use,  
Thrice he stay'd, and thrice in spirit of scorn  
620 Tears suff'red Angels weep, but forth at last  
Words in yow're with light found out their way  
O Myriads of immortal Spirits, O Powers of

Match-

Matchless, but withal a knight, and that knyfe  
Was not: inglorious, though the event was dire;  
As this place testifies, and this dire change  
Hateful to latter as to former power of man  
Foreseeing no presaging; from the Depth  
Of knowledge past all present, could have feare'd,  
How such united some di' Gods; how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse?  
For who can yet believe, though after loss,  
That all those puissant Legions, whose exile  
Hath empaint'd Heav'n, shall fail to re-ascend  
Self-raised, and impell'd: their native seat.  
For me, be witness all the Host of Heav'n,  
If counsels different, or danger shad'd  
By me, hauis lost our hopes. But he who reigns  
Monarch in Heav'n, till then as one secure  
Sat on his Throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent or custome, and his Regal State  
Put forth at full; but still his strength conceal'd,  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth his might we know, and know our own  
So as not either to provoke, or dread  
New war, provokt; our better part remains  
To work in close designs, by fraud or guile  
What force effecteth not? that lie no less:  
A length from us may find, who overcomes  
By force, hath overcome but half his foe.  
Space may produce new Worlds; whereof some  
There went a fame in Heav'n that he ere long  
Intended to estate, and therem plant  
A generation, whom his choice regard  
Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven.

Thither,

630

640

650

660 Thither, if but to prison, shall be perhaps  
Our first eruption, whither or elsewhere :  
For this Infernal Pit shall never hold  
Cælestrial Spirits in Bondage, nor the Abyss  
Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
Full Counsel must mature : Poore is glespird,  
For who can think Submission? Warr then, Warr  
Open or understood must be resolvd.

670 He spake : and to confirm his words, out-flew  
Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze  
Far round illumin'd hell : high by they rig'd  
Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arm's  
Clash'd on their sounding Shields the din of war,  
Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heav'n.

680 There stood a Hill, not far whose grisly top  
Belch'd fire, and growling Smoak ; the rest entire  
Shon with a glossie scurff, undoubted sign  
That in his womb was hid metallic Ore,  
The work of Sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed  
A numerous Brigad hasten'd : As when bands  
Of Pioners with Spade and Pickaxe arm'd  
Forerun the Royal Camp, to trench a Field,  
Or cast a Rampart. *Mammon* led them on,  
*Mammon*, the least exalted Spirit that fell  
From heav'n, for ev'n in heav'n his looks & thoughts  
Were always downward bent, admiring more  
The riches of Heav'n's pavement, trod'n Gold,  
Then aught divine or holy else enjoy'd  
In vision, beatific : by him first of human  
Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
Ransack'd the Center, and with impious hands

Rif'd

Rift'd the bowels of this mother Earth<sup>1</sup> b<sup>2</sup> up  
 For Treasures better hid<sup>3</sup> S<sup>4</sup> u<sup>5</sup> n<sup>6</sup> had his crew<sup>7</sup> b<sup>8</sup>  
 Op'd into the Hill<sup>9</sup> in spacious wound<sup>10</sup> a<sup>11</sup> t<sup>12</sup> n<sup>13</sup> t<sup>14</sup>  
 And digg'd out ribs of Gold<sup>15</sup> Let none admire<sup>16</sup> b<sup>17</sup>  
 That riches grow in Hell<sup>18</sup> that scyle may best<sup>19</sup> b<sup>20</sup>  
 Deserve the precious stoned And h<sup>21</sup> d<sup>22</sup> r<sup>23</sup> d<sup>24</sup> t<sup>25</sup> g<sup>26</sup> o<sup>27</sup> s<sup>28</sup> e<sup>29</sup> r<sup>30</sup> v<sup>31</sup> e<sup>32</sup>  
 Who boast in mortal things<sup>33</sup> and wondering tell<sup>34</sup> b<sup>35</sup>  
 Of *Babel* and the works of *Atenophian Kings*<sup>36</sup> b<sup>37</sup>  
 Learn how thin greatest<sup>38</sup> Modestum<sup>39</sup> of Fame<sup>40</sup> b<sup>41</sup>  
 And Strength<sup>42</sup> and Art<sup>43</sup> are easily overdone<sup>44</sup> b<sup>45</sup>  
 By Spisits<sup>46</sup> i<sup>47</sup> p<sup>48</sup> o<sup>49</sup> b<sup>50</sup> h<sup>51</sup> i<sup>52</sup> v<sup>53</sup> i<sup>54</sup> n<sup>55</sup> d<sup>56</sup> u<sup>57</sup> r<sup>58</sup> i<sup>59</sup> n<sup>60</sup> t<sup>61</sup> r<sup>62</sup> i<sup>63</sup> v<sup>64</sup> i<sup>65</sup> n<sup>66</sup> t<sup>67</sup> r<sup>68</sup> i<sup>69</sup> n<sup>70</sup> t<sup>71</sup> r<sup>72</sup> i<sup>73</sup> v<sup>74</sup> i<sup>75</sup> n<sup>76</sup> t<sup>77</sup> r<sup>78</sup> i<sup>79</sup> n<sup>80</sup> t<sup>81</sup> r<sup>82</sup> i<sup>83</sup> v<sup>84</sup> i<sup>85</sup> n<sup>86</sup> t<sup>87</sup> r<sup>88</sup> i<sup>89</sup> n<sup>90</sup> t<sup>91</sup> r<sup>92</sup> i<sup>93</sup> v<sup>94</sup> i<sup>95</sup> n<sup>96</sup> t<sup>97</sup> r<sup>98</sup> i<sup>99</sup> n<sup>100</sup> t<sup>101</sup> r<sup>102</sup> i<sup>103</sup> v<sup>104</sup> i<sup>105</sup> n<sup>106</sup> t<sup>107</sup> r<sup>108</sup> i<sup>109</sup> n<sup>110</sup> t<sup>111</sup> r<sup>112</sup> i<sup>113</sup> v<sup>114</sup> i<sup>115</sup> n<sup>116</sup> t<sup>117</sup> r<sup>118</sup> i<sup>119</sup> n<sup>120</sup> t<sup>121</sup> r<sup>122</sup> i<sup>123</sup> v<sup>124</sup> i<sup>125</sup> n<sup>126</sup> t<sup>127</sup> r<sup>128</sup> i<sup>129</sup> n<sup>130</sup> t<sup>131</sup> r<sup>132</sup> i<sup>133</sup> v<sup>134</sup> i<sup>135</sup> n<sup>136</sup> t<sup>137</sup> r<sup>138</sup> i<sup>139</sup> n<sup>140</sup> t<sup>141</sup> r<sup>142</sup> i<sup>143</sup> v<sup>144</sup> i<sup>145</sup> n<sup>146</sup> t<sup>147</sup> r<sup>148</sup> i<sup>149</sup> n<sup>150</sup> t<sup>151</sup> r<sup>152</sup> i<sup>153</sup> v<sup>154</sup> i<sup>155</sup> n<sup>156</sup> t<sup>157</sup> r<sup>158</sup> i<sup>159</sup> n<sup>160</sup> t<sup>161</sup> r<sup>162</sup> i<sup>163</sup> v<sup>164</sup> i<sup>165</sup> n<sup>166</sup> t<sup>167</sup> r<sup>168</sup> i<sup>169</sup> n<sup>170</sup> t<sup>171</sup> r<sup>172</sup> i<sup>173</sup> v<sup>174</sup> i<sup>175</sup> n<sup>176</sup> t<sup>177</sup> r<sup>178</sup> i<sup>179</sup> n<sup>180</sup> t<sup>181</sup> r<sup>182</sup> i<sup>183</sup> v<sup>184</sup> i<sup>185</sup> n<sup>186</sup> t<sup>187</sup> r<sup>188</sup> i<sup>189</sup> n<sup>190</sup> t<sup>191</sup> r<sup>192</sup> i<sup>193</sup> v<sup>194</sup> i<sup>195</sup> n<sup>196</sup> t<sup>197</sup> r<sup>198</sup> i<sup>199</sup> n<sup>200</sup> t<sup>201</sup> r<sup>202</sup> i<sup>203</sup> v<sup>204</sup> i<sup>205</sup> n<sup>206</sup> t<sup>207</sup> r<sup>208</sup> i<sup>209</sup> n<sup>210</sup> t<sup>211</sup> r<sup>212</sup> i<sup>213</sup> v<sup>214</sup> i<sup>215</sup> n<sup>216</sup> t<sup>217</sup> r<sup>218</sup> i<sup>219</sup> n<sup>220</sup> t<sup>221</sup> r<sup>222</sup> i<sup>223</sup> v<sup>224</sup> i<sup>225</sup> n<sup>226</sup> t<sup>227</sup> r<sup>228</sup> i<sup>229</sup> n<sup>230</sup> t<sup>231</sup> r<sup>232</sup> i<sup>233</sup> v<sup>234</sup> i<sup>235</sup> n<sup>236</sup> t<sup>237</sup> r<sup>238</sup> i<sup>239</sup> n<sup>240</sup> t<sup>241</sup> r<sup>242</sup> i<sup>243</sup> v<sup>244</sup> i<sup>245</sup> n<sup>246</sup> t<sup>247</sup> r<sup>248</sup> i<sup>249</sup> n<sup>250</sup> t<sup>251</sup> r<sup>252</sup> i<sup>253</sup> v<sup>254</sup> i<sup>255</sup> n<sup>256</sup> t<sup>257</sup> r<sup>258</sup> i<sup>259</sup> n<sup>260</sup> t<sup>261</sup> r<sup>262</sup> i<sup>263</sup> v<sup>264</sup> i<sup>265</sup> n<sup>266</sup> t<sup>267</sup> r<sup>268</sup> i<sup>269</sup> n<sup>270</sup> t<sup>271</sup> r<sup>272</sup> i<sup>273</sup> v<sup>274</sup> i<sup>275</sup> n<sup>276</sup> t<sup>277</sup> r<sup>278</sup> i<sup>279</sup> n<sup>280</sup> t<sup>281</sup> r<sup>282</sup> i<sup>283</sup> v<sup>284</sup> i<sup>285</sup> n<sup>286</sup> t<sup>287</sup> r<sup>288</sup> i<sup>289</sup> n<sup>290</sup> t<sup>291</sup> r<sup>292</sup> i<sup>293</sup> v<sup>294</sup> i<sup>295</sup> n<sup>296</sup> t<sup>297</sup> r<sup>298</sup> i<sup>299</sup> n<sup>300</sup> t<sup>301</sup> r<sup>302</sup> i<sup>303</sup> v<sup>304</sup> i<sup>305</sup> n<sup>306</sup> t<sup>307</sup> r<sup>308</sup> i<sup>309</sup> n<sup>310</sup> t<sup>311</sup> r<sup>312</sup> i<sup>313</sup> v<sup>314</sup> i<sup>315</sup> n<sup>316</sup> t<sup>317</sup> r<sup>318</sup> i<sup>319</sup> n<sup>320</sup> t<sup>321</sup> r<sup>322</sup> i<sup>323</sup> v<sup>324</sup> i<sup>325</sup> n<sup>326</sup> t<sup>327</sup> r<sup>328</sup> i<sup>329</sup> n<sup>330</sup> t<sup>331</sup> r<sup>332</sup> i<sup>333</sup> v<sup>334</sup> i<sup>335</sup> n<sup>336</sup> t<sup>337</sup> r<sup>338</sup> i<sup>339</sup> n<sup>340</sup> t<sup>341</sup> r<sup>342</sup> i<sup>343</sup> v<sup>344</sup> i<sup>345</sup> n<sup>346</sup> t<sup>347</sup> r<sup>348</sup> i<sup>349</sup> n<sup>350</sup> t<sup>351</sup> r<sup>352</sup> i<sup>353</sup> v<sup>354</sup> i<sup>355</sup> n<sup>356</sup> t<sup>357</sup> r<sup>358</sup> i<sup>359</sup> n<sup>360</sup> t<sup>361</sup> r<sup>362</sup> i<sup>363</sup> v<sup>364</sup> i<sup>365</sup> n<sup>366</sup> t<sup>367</sup> r<sup>368</sup> i<sup>369</sup> n<sup>370</sup> t<sup>371</sup> r<sup>372</sup> i<sup>373</sup> v<sup>374</sup> i<sup>375</sup> n<sup>376</sup> t<sup>377</sup> r<sup>378</sup> i<sup>379</sup> n<sup>380</sup> t<sup>381</sup> r<sup>382</sup> i<sup>383</sup> v<sup>384</sup> i<sup>385</sup> n<sup>386</sup> t<sup>387</sup> r<sup>388</sup> i<sup>389</sup> n<sup>390</sup> t<sup>391</sup> r<sup>392</sup> i<sup>393</sup> v<sup>394</sup> i<sup>395</sup> n<sup>396</sup> t<sup>397</sup> r<sup>398</sup> i<sup>399</sup> n<sup>400</sup> t<sup>401</sup> r<sup>402</sup> i<sup>403</sup> v<sup>404</sup> i<sup>405</sup> n<sup>406</sup> t<sup>407</sup> r<sup>408</sup> i<sup>409</sup> n<sup>410</sup> t<sup>411</sup> r<sup>412</sup> i<sup>413</sup> v<sup>414</sup> i<sup>415</sup> n<sup>416</sup> t<sup>417</sup> r<sup>418</sup> i<sup>419</sup> n<sup>420</sup> t<sup>421</sup> r<sup>422</sup> i<sup>423</sup> v<sup>424</sup> i<sup>425</sup> n<sup>426</sup> t<sup>427</sup> r<sup>428</sup> i<sup>429</sup> n<sup>430</sup> t<sup>431</sup> r<sup>432</sup> i<sup>433</sup> v<sup>434</sup> i<sup>435</sup> n<sup>436</sup> t<sup>437</sup> r<sup>438</sup> i<sup>439</sup> n<sup>440</sup> t<sup>441</sup> r<sup>442</sup> i<sup>443</sup> v<sup>444</sup> i<sup>445</sup> n<sup>446</sup> t<sup>447</sup> r<sup>448</sup> i<sup>449</sup> n<sup>450</sup> t<sup>451</sup> r<sup>452</sup> i<sup>453</sup> v<sup>454</sup> i<sup>455</sup> n<sup>456</sup> t<sup>457</sup> r<sup>458</sup> i<sup>459</sup> n<sup>460</sup> t<sup>461</sup> r<sup>462</sup> i<sup>463</sup> v<sup>464</sup> i<sup>465</sup> n<sup>466</sup> t<sup>467</sup> r<sup>468</sup> i<sup>469</sup> n<sup>470</sup> t<sup>471</sup> r<sup>472</sup> i<sup>473</sup> v<sup>474</sup> i<sup>475</sup> n<sup>476</sup> t<sup>477</sup> r<sup>478</sup> i<sup>479</sup> n<sup>480</sup> t<sup>481</sup> r<sup>482</sup> i<sup>483</sup> v<sup>484</sup> i<sup>485</sup> n<sup>486</sup> t<sup>487</sup> r<sup>488</sup> i<sup>489</sup> n<sup>490</sup> t<sup>491</sup> r<sup>492</sup> i<sup>493</sup> v<sup>494</sup> i<sup>495</sup> n<sup>496</sup> t<sup>497</sup> r<sup>498</sup> i<sup>499</sup> n<sup>500</sup> t<sup>501</sup> r<sup>502</sup> i<sup>503</sup> v<sup>504</sup> i<sup>505</sup> n<sup>506</sup> t<sup>507</sup> r<sup>508</sup> i<sup>509</sup> n<sup>510</sup> t<sup>511</sup> r<sup>512</sup> i<sup>513</sup> v<sup>514</sup> i<sup>515</sup> n<sup>516</sup> t<sup>517</sup> r<sup>518</sup> i<sup>519</sup> n<sup>520</sup> t<sup>521</sup> r<sup>522</sup> i<sup>523</sup> v<sup>524</sup> i<sup>525</sup> n<sup>526</sup> t<sup>527</sup> r<sup>528</sup> i<sup>529</sup> n<sup>530</sup> t<sup>531</sup> r<sup>532</sup> i<sup>533</sup> v<sup>534</sup> i<sup>535</sup> n<sup>536</sup> t<sup>537</sup> r<sup>538</sup> i<sup>539</sup> n<sup>540</sup> t<sup>541</sup> r<sup>542</sup> i<sup>543</sup> v<sup>544</sup> i<sup>545</sup> n<sup>546</sup> t<sup>547</sup> r<sup>548</sup> i<sup>549</sup> n<sup>550</sup> t<sup>551</sup> r<sup>552</sup> i<sup>553</sup> v<sup>554</sup> i<sup>555</sup> n<sup>556</sup> t<sup>557</sup> r<sup>558</sup> i<sup>559</sup> n<sup>560</sup> t<sup>561</sup> r<sup>562</sup> i<sup>563</sup> v<sup>564</sup> i<sup>565</sup> n<sup>566</sup> t<sup>567</sup> r<sup>568</sup> i<sup>569</sup> n<sup>570</sup> t<sup>571</sup> r<sup>572</sup> i<sup>573</sup> v<sup>574</sup> i<sup>575</sup> n<sup>576</sup> t<sup>577</sup> r<sup>578</sup> i<sup>579</sup> n<sup>580</sup> t<sup>581</sup> r<sup>582</sup> i<sup>583</sup> v<sup>584</sup> i<sup>585</sup> n<sup>586</sup> t<sup>587</sup> r<sup>588</sup> i<sup>589</sup> n<sup>590</sup> t<sup>591</sup> r<sup>592</sup> i<sup>593</sup> v<sup>594</sup> i<sup>595</sup> n<sup>596</sup> t<sup>597</sup> r<sup>598</sup> i<sup>599</sup> n<sup>600</sup> t<sup>601</sup> r<sup>602</sup> i<sup>603</sup> v<sup>604</sup> i<sup>605</sup> n<sup>606</sup> t<sup>607</sup> r<sup>608</sup> i<sup>609</sup> n<sup>610</sup> t<sup>611</sup> r<sup>612</sup> i<sup>613</sup> v<sup>614</sup> i<sup>615</sup> n<sup>616</sup> t<sup>617</sup> r<sup>618</sup> i<sup>619</sup> n<sup>620</sup> t<sup>621</sup> r<sup>622</sup> i<sup>623</sup> v<sup>624</sup> i<sup>625</sup> n<sup>626</sup> t<sup>627</sup> r<sup>628</sup> i<sup>629</sup> n<sup>630</sup> t<sup>631</sup> r<sup>632</sup> i<sup>633</sup> v<sup>634</sup> i<sup>635</sup> n<sup>636</sup> t<sup>637</sup> r<sup>638</sup> i<sup>639</sup> n<sup>640</sup> t<sup>641</sup> r<sup>642</sup> i<sup>643</sup> v<sup>644</sup> i<sup>645</sup> n<sup>646</sup> t<sup>647</sup> r<sup>648</sup> i<sup>649</sup> n<sup>650</sup> t<sup>651</sup> r<sup>652</sup> i<sup>653</sup> v<sup>654</sup> i<sup>655</sup> n<sup>656</sup> t<sup>657</sup> r<sup>658</sup> i<sup>659</sup> n<sup>660</sup> t<sup>661</sup> r<sup>662</sup> i<sup>663</sup> v<sup>664</sup> i<sup>665</sup> n<sup>666</sup> t<sup>667</sup> r<sup>668</sup> i<sup>669</sup> n<sup>670</sup> t<sup>671</sup> r<sup>672</sup> i<sup>673</sup> v<sup>674</sup> i<sup>675</sup> n<sup>676</sup> t<sup>677</sup> r<sup>678</sup> i<sup>679</sup> n<sup>680</sup> t<sup>681</sup> r<sup>682</sup> i<sup>683</sup> v<sup>684</sup> i<sup>685</sup> n<sup>686</sup> t<sup>687</sup> r<sup>688</sup> i<sup>689</sup> n<sup>690</sup> t<sup>691</sup> r<sup>692</sup> i<sup>693</sup> v<sup>694</sup> i<sup>695</sup> n<sup>696</sup> t<sup>697</sup> r<sup>698</sup> i<sup>699</sup> n<sup>700</sup> t<sup>701</sup> r<sup>702</sup> i<sup>703</sup> v<sup>704</sup> i<sup>705</sup> n<sup>706</sup> t<sup>707</sup> r<sup>708</sup> i<sup>709</sup> n<sup>710</sup> t<sup>711</sup> r<sup>712</sup> i<sup>713</sup> v<sup>714</sup> i<sup>715</sup> n<sup>716</sup> t<sup>717</sup> r<sup>718</sup> i<sup>719</sup> n<sup>720</sup> t<sup>721</sup> r<sup>722</sup> i<sup>723</sup> v<sup>724</sup> i<sup>725</sup> n<sup>726</sup> t<sup>727</sup> r<sup>728</sup> i<sup>729</sup> n<sup>730</sup> t<sup>731</sup> r<sup>732</sup> i<sup>733</sup> v<sup>734</sup> i<sup>735</sup> n<sup>736</sup> t<sup>737</sup> r<sup>738</sup> i<sup>739</sup> n<sup>740</sup> t<sup>741</sup> r<sup>742</sup> i<sup>743</sup> v<sup>744</sup> i<sup>745</sup> n<sup>746</sup> t<sup>747</sup> r<sup>748</sup> i<sup>749</sup> n<sup>750</sup> t<sup>751</sup> r<sup>752</sup> i<sup>753</sup> v<sup>754</sup> i<sup>755</sup> n<sup>756</sup> t<sup>757</sup> r<sup>758</sup> i<sup>759</sup> n<sup>760</sup> t<sup>761</sup> r<sup>762</sup> i<sup>763</sup> v<sup>764</sup> i<sup>765</sup> n<sup>766</sup> t<sup>767</sup> r<sup>768</sup> i<sup>769</sup> n<sup>770</sup> t<sup>771</sup> r<sup>772</sup> i<sup>773</sup> v<sup>774</sup> i<sup>775</sup> n<sup>776</sup> t<sup>777</sup> r<sup>778</sup> i<sup>779</sup> n<sup>780</sup> t<sup>781</sup> r<sup>782</sup> i<sup>783</sup> v<sup>784</sup> i<sup>785</sup> n<sup>786</sup> t<sup>787</sup> r<sup>788</sup> i<sup>789</sup> n<sup>790</sup> t<sup>791</sup> r<sup>792</sup> i<sup>793</sup> v<sup>794</sup> i<sup>795</sup> n<sup>796</sup> t<sup>797</sup> r<sup>798</sup> i<sup>799</sup> n<sup>800</sup> t<sup>801</sup> r<sup>802</sup> i<sup>803</sup> v<sup>804</sup> i<sup>805</sup> n<sup>806</sup> t<sup>807</sup> r<sup>808</sup> i<sup>809</sup> n<sup>810</sup> t<sup>811</sup> r<sup>812</sup> i<sup>813</sup> v<sup>814</sup> i<sup>815</sup> n<sup>816</sup> t<sup>817</sup> r<sup>818</sup> i<sup>819</sup> n<sup>820</sup> t<sup>821</sup> r<sup>822</sup> i<sup>823</sup> v<sup>824</sup> i<sup>825</sup> n<sup>826</sup> t<sup>827</sup> r<sup>828</sup> i<sup>829</sup> n<sup>830</sup> t<sup>831</sup> r<sup>832</sup> i<sup>833</sup> v<sup>834</sup> i<sup>835</sup> n<sup>836</sup> t<sup>837</sup> r<sup>838</sup> i<sup>839</sup> n<sup>840</sup> t<sup>841</sup> r<sup>842</sup> i<sup>843</sup> v<sup>844</sup> i<sup>845</sup> n<sup>846</sup> t<sup>847</sup> r<sup>848</sup> i<sup>849</sup> n<sup>850</sup> t<sup>851</sup> r<sup>852</sup> i<sup>853</sup> v<sup>854</sup> i<sup>855</sup> n<sup>856</sup> t<sup>857</sup> r<sup>858</sup> i<sup>859</sup> n<sup>860</sup> t<sup>861</sup> r<sup>862</sup> i<sup>863</sup> v<sup>864</sup> i<sup>865</sup> n<sup>866</sup> t<sup>867</sup> r<sup>868</sup> i<sup>869</sup> n<sup>870</sup> t<sup>871</sup> r<sup>872</sup> i<sup>873</sup> v<sup>874</sup> i<sup>875</sup> n<sup>876</sup> t<sup>877</sup> r<sup>878</sup> i<sup>879</sup> n<sup>880</sup> t<sup>881</sup> r<sup>882</sup> i<sup>883</sup> v<sup>884</sup> i<sup>885</sup> n<sup>886</sup> t<sup>887</sup> r<sup>888</sup> i<sup>889</sup> n<sup>890</sup> t<sup>891</sup> r<sup>892</sup> i<sup>893</sup> v<sup>894</sup> i<sup>895</sup> n<sup>896</sup> t<sup>897</sup> r<sup>898</sup> i<sup>899</sup> n<sup>900</sup> t<sup>901</sup> r<sup>902</sup> i<sup>903</sup> v<sup>904</sup> i<sup>905</sup> n<sup>906</sup> t<sup>907</sup> r<sup>908</sup> i<sup>909</sup> n<sup>910</sup> t<sup>911</sup> r<sup>912</sup> i<sup>913</sup> v<sup>914</sup> i<sup>915</sup> n<sup>916</sup> t<sup>917</sup> r<sup>918</sup> i<sup>919</sup> n<sup>920</sup> t<sup>921</sup> r<sup>922</sup> i<sup>923</sup> v<sup>924</sup> i<sup>925</sup> n<sup>926</sup> t<sup>927</sup> r<sup>928</sup> i<sup>929</sup> n<sup>930</sup> t<sup>931</sup> r<sup>932</sup> i<sup>933</sup> v<sup>934</sup> i<sup>935</sup> n<sup>936</sup> t<sup>937</sup> r<sup>938</sup> i<sup>939</sup> n<sup>940</sup> t<sup>941</sup> r<sup>942</sup> i<sup>943</sup> v<sup>944</sup> i<sup>945</sup> n<sup>946</sup> t<sup>947</sup> r<sup>948</sup> i<sup>949</sup> n<sup>950</sup> t<sup>951</sup> r<sup>952</sup> i<sup>953</sup> v<sup>954</sup> i<sup>955</sup> n<sup>956</sup> t<sup>957</sup> r<sup>958</sup> i<sup>959</sup> n<sup>960</sup> t<sup>961</sup> r<sup>962</sup> i<sup>963</sup> v<sup>964</sup> i<sup>965</sup> n<sup>966</sup> t<sup>967</sup> r<sup>968</sup> i<sup>969</sup> n<sup>970</sup> t<sup>971</sup> r<sup>972</sup> i<sup>973</sup> v<sup>974</sup> i<sup>975</sup> n<sup>976</sup> t<sup>977</sup> r<sup>978</sup> i<sup>979</sup> n<sup>980</sup> t<sup>981</sup> r<sup>982</sup> i<sup>983</sup> v<sup>984</sup> i<sup>985</sup> n<sup>986</sup> t<sup>987</sup> r<sup>988</sup> i<sup>989</sup> n<sup>990</sup> t<sup>991</sup> r<sup>992</sup> i<sup>993</sup> v<sup>994</sup> i<sup>995</sup> n<sup>996</sup> t<sup>997</sup> r<sup>998</sup> i<sup>999</sup> n<sup>1000</sup> t<sup>1001</sup> r<sup>1002</sup> i<sup>1003</sup> v<sup>1004</sup> i<sup>1005</sup> n<sup>1006</sup> t<sup>1007</sup> r<sup>1008</sup> i<sup>1009</sup> n<sup>1010</sup> t<sup>1011</sup> r<sup>1012</sup> i<sup>1013</sup> v<sup>1014</sup> i<sup>1015</sup> n<sup>1016</sup> t<sup>1017</sup> r<sup>1018</sup> i<sup>1019</sup> n<sup>1020</sup> t<sup>1021</sup> r<sup>1022</sup> i<sup>1023</sup> v<sup>1024</sup> i<sup>1025</sup> n<sup>1026</sup> t<sup>1027</sup> r<sup>1028</sup> i<sup>1029</sup> n<sup>1030</sup> t<sup>1031</sup> r<sup>1032</sup> i<sup>1033</sup> v<sup>1034</sup> i<sup>1035</sup> n<sup>1036</sup> t<sup>1037</sup> r<sup>1038</sup> i<sup>1039</sup> n<sup>1040</sup> t<sup>1041</sup> r<sup>1042</sup> i<sup>1043</sup> v<sup>1044</sup> i<sup>1045</sup> n<sup>1046</sup> t<sup>1047</sup> r<sup>1048</sup> i<sup>1049</sup> n<sup>1050</sup> t<sup>1051</sup> r<sup>1052</sup> i<sup>1053</sup> v<sup>1054</sup> i<sup>1055</sup> n<sup>1056</sup> t<sup>1057</sup> r<sup>1058</sup> i<sup>1059</sup> n<sup>1060</sup> t<sup>1061</sup> r<sup>1062</sup> i<sup>1063</sup> v<sup>1064</sup> i<sup>1065</sup> n<sup>1066</sup> t<sup>1067</sup> r<sup>1068</sup> i<sup>1069</sup> n<sup>1070</sup> t<sup>1071</sup> r<sup>1072</sup> i<sup>1073</sup> v<sup>1074</sup> i<sup>1075</sup> n<sup>1076</sup> t<sup>1077</sup> r<sup>1078</sup> i<sup>1079</sup> n<sup>1080</sup> t<sup>1081</sup> r<sup>1082</sup> i<sup>1083</sup> v<sup>1084</sup> i<sup>1085</sup> n<sup>1086</sup> t<sup>1087</sup> r<sup>1088</sup> i<sup>1089</sup> n<sup>1090</sup> t<sup>1091</sup> r<sup>1092</sup> i<sup>1093</sup> v<sup>1094</sup> i<sup>1095</sup> n<sup>1096</sup> t<sup>1097</sup> r<sup>1098</sup> i<sup>1099</sup> n<sup>1100</sup> t<sup>1101</sup> r<sup>1102</sup> i<sup>1103</sup> v<sup>1104</sup> i<sup>1105</sup> n<sup>1106</sup> t<sup>1107</sup> r<sup>1108</sup> i<sup>1109</sup> n<sup>1110</sup> t<sup>1111</sup> r<sup>1112</sup> i<sup>1113</sup> v<sup>1114</sup> i<sup>1115</sup> n<sup>1116</sup> t<sup>1117</sup> r<sup>1118</sup> i<sup>1119</sup> n<sup>1120</sup> t<sup>1121</sup> r<sup>1122</sup> i<sup>1123</sup> v<sup>1124</sup> i<sup>1125</sup> n<sup>1126</sup> t<sup>1127</sup> r<sup>1128</sup> i<sup>1129</sup> n<sup>1130</sup> t<sup>1131</sup> r<sup>1132</sup> i<sup>1133</sup> v<sup>1134</sup> i<sup>1135</sup> n<sup>1136</sup> t<sup>1137</sup> r<sup>1138</sup> i<sup>1139</sup> n<sup>1140</sup> t<sup>1141</sup> r<sup>1142</sup> i<sup>1143</sup> v<sup>1144</sup> i<sup>1145</sup> n<sup>1146</sup> t<sup>1147</sup> r<sup>1148</sup> i<sup>1149</sup> n<sup>1150</sup> t<sup>1151</sup> r<sup>1152</sup> i<sup>1153</sup> v<sup>1154</sup> i<sup>1155</sup> n<sup>1156</sup> t<sup>1157</sup> r<sup>1158</sup> i<sup>1159</sup> n<sup>1160</sup> t<sup>1161</sup> r<sup>1162</sup> i<sup>1163</sup> v<sup>1164</sup> i<sup>1165</sup> n<sup>1166</sup> t<sup>1167</sup> r<sup>1168</sup> i<sup>1169</sup> n<sup>1170</sup> t<sup>1171</sup> r<sup>1172</sup> i<sup>1173</sup> v<sup>1174</sup> i<sup>1175</sup> n<sup>1176</sup> t<sup>1177</sup> r<sup>1178</sup> i<sup>1179</sup> n<sup>1180</sup> t<sup>1181</sup> r<sup>1182</sup> i<sup>1183</sup> v<sup>1184</sup> i<sup>1185</sup> n<sup>1186</sup> t<sup>1187</sup> r<sup>1188</sup> i<sup>1189</sup> n<sup>1190</sup> t<sup>1191</sup> r<sup>1192</sup> i<sup>1193</sup> v<sup>1194</sup> i<sup>1195</sup> n<sup>1196</sup> t<sup>1197</sup> r<sup>1198</sup> i<sup>1199</sup> n<sup>1200</sup> t<sup>1201</sup> r<sup>1202</sup> i<sup>1203</sup> v<sup>1204</sup> i<sup>1205</sup> n<sup>1206</sup> t<sup>1207</sup> r<sup

Equal'd in all thir glories, so inscribe the  
 Below the Serapis thir Gods, to seat  
 Thir Kings, when Egypt with Assysia strove  
 In wealth and luxurie. Th' ascending pile, is  
 Stood fixt, the stately height, and stait the dores  
 Op'ning: thir brazen foulds discover wide  
 Within, her ample spase, ore the smooth  
 And level pavements, from the arched roof  
 Pendent by dexter Magic, many a row  
 Of Starry lamps, and blazinc Crickets fed  
 With Naphtha, and sulphur, yeilding light  
 As from a playne. Then hasty multitudes  
 Admiring, encircled, and the work some praise  
 And sothe the Architect, his hand was knowning  
 In Heav'ny shrupps, Towred structure high,  
 Where Subser'd Angels held their residence,  
 And sat as Priests, whom the supreme King  
 Endited so much power, and gave to rule,  
 Each in his Hierachie, the Orders bright, built  
 Nor was his noise, unheard or unadord  
 In ancient Greece, and in Lybia, and  
 Men call'd him Alchymie, and how he fell  
 From Heav'n, they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
 Sheer o're thg Chrythal Battlements: from Morn  
 To Noon he sojourned, from Noon to dewy Eve,  
 A Summers day, and with the setting Sun  
 Drot from the zenith, like a falling Star,  
 On Lownes tht infarce Hellishnothey relate,  
 Erring; for he wath this rebellious soul  
 Fell long before, and though a wretched fiy now  
 To have bin a noble bright Towre, now diff're  
 By all his Engins, his was the dungeone, (scape  
 With

With his industrious crew to build in hell,  
 Mean while the winged Haralds by command  
 Of Sovran power, with awful Ceremony  
 And Trumpets sound throughout the Host pro-  
 A solemn Council forthwith to be held (claim  
 At Pandemonium, the high Capital  
 Of Satan and his Peers: thir summons call'd  
 From every and Band squared Regiment  
 By place or choice the worthiest; they anon  
 With hundreds and with thousands trooping came 760  
 Attended: all access was throng'd, the Gates  
 And Porches wide, but chief the spacious Hall  
 (Though like a cover'd field, where Champions  
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's chair (bold  
 Desir'd the best of Panim chivalry  
 To mortal combat or career with Lance)  
 Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,  
 Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings, As Bees  
 In spring time, when the Sun with Taurus rides,  
 Poure forth thir populous youth about the Hive 770  
 In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers  
 Flie to and fro, or on the smoothed Plank,  
 The suburb of thir Straw-built Cittadel,  
 New rub'd with Baume, expatiate and confer  
 Thir State affairs. So thick the aerie crowd  
 Swarm'd and were straitn'd; till the Signal giv'n,  
 Behold a wonder! they but now who seem'd  
 In bigness to surpass Earths Giant Sons  
 Now les than smallest Dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng numberless, like that Pigmean Race 780  
 Beyond the Indian Mount, or Faerie Elves,  
 Whose midnight Revels, by a Forrest side

Or Fountain some belated Peasant sees,  
Or dreams he sees, while over head the Moon  
Sits Arbitress, and neerer to the Earth  
Wheels her pale course, they on thir mirth & dance  
Intent, with jocond Music charm his ear;  
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms

790 Reduc'd thir shapes immense, and were at large,  
Though without number still amidst the Hall  
Of that infernal Court. But far within  
And in thir own dimensions like themselves  
The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim  
In close recess and secret conclave sat  
A thousand Demy-Gods on golden seat's,  
Frequent and full. After short silence then  
And summons read, the great consult began.

*The End of the First Book.*

PARA-

1620  
from the original manuscript in the  
BOSTON LIBRARY

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK II.

**H**igh on a Throne of Royal State, which far  
Outshon the wealth of *Ormus* and of *Ind*,  
Or where the gorgeous East with richest  
Shows on her Kings *Barbaric* Pearl & Gold, (and  
Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd  
To that bad eminence; and from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high, infatiate to pursue  
Vain War with Heav'n, and by success untaught  
His proud imaginations thus disblaide.

10

Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heav'n,  
For since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigor, though opprest and fall'n,  
I give not Heav'n for lost. From this descent  
Celestial Vertues rising, will appear  
More glorious and more dread then from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate:

Book 2. *Paradise lost.*

20 Mee though just right, and the fixt Laws of Heav'n  
Did first create your Leader, next, free choice,  
With what besides, in Counsel or in Fight,  
Hath bin achievd of merit, yet this loss.  
Thus farr at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establisht in a safe unenvied Throne  
Yeilded with full consent. The happier state  
In Heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw  
Envy from each inferior; but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Formost to stand against the Thunderers aime  
Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
30 Of endless pain? where there is then no good  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From Faction; for none sure will claim in hell  
Precedence, none, whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more. With this advantage then  
To union, and firm Faith, and firm accord,  
More then can be in Heav'n, we now return  
To claim our just inheritance of old,  
Surer to prosper then prosperity  
40 Could have assur'd us; and by what best way,  
Whether of open Warr or covert guile,  
We now debate; who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd, and next him *Moloc*, Scepter'd King  
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit  
That fought in Heav'n; now fiercer by despair:  
His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd  
Equal in strength, and rather then be less  
Car'd not to be at all; with that care lost  
Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse

He reckd not, and these words thereaster spake.

50

My sentence is for open Warr: Of Wiles,  
More unexpert, I boast not: them let those  
Contrive who need, or when they need, not now.  
For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
Millions that stand in Arms, and longing wait  
The Signal to ascend, sit lingring here  
Heav'ns fugitives, and for thir dwelling place  
Accept this dark opprobrious Den of shame,  
The Prison of his Tyranny who Reigns  
By our delay? no, let us rather choose  
Arm'd with Hell flames and fury all at once  
O're Heav'ns high Towns to force resistless way,  
Turning our Tortures into horrid Arms  
Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise  
Of his Almighty Engin he shall hear  
Infernal Thunder, and for Lightning see  
Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
Among his Angels; and his Throne it self  
Mixt with *Tartarean* Sulphur, and strange fire,  
His own invented Torments. But perhaps  
The way seems difficult and steep to scale  
With upright wing against a higher foe.  
Let such bethink them, if the Sleepy drench  
Of that forgetful Lake benumme not still,  
That in our proper motion we ascend  
Up to our native seat: descent and fall  
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late  
When the fierce Foe hung on our brok'n Rear  
Insulting, and pursu'd us through the Deep,  
With what compulsion and laborious flight  
We sunk thus low? Th' ascent is easie then;

60

70

80

Th'

Th' event is fear'd ; should we again provoke  
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find  
 To our destruction ; if there be in Hell  
 Fear to be worse destroy'd ; what can be worse  
 Then to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, con-  
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe ; (demin'd  
 Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
 Must exercise us without hope of end

90 The Vassals of his anger, when the Scourge  
 Inexorably, and the torturing houre  
 Calls us to Penance ? More destroy'd then thus  
 We should be quite abolish'd and expire.  
 What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense  
 His utmost ire ? which to the highth enrag'd,  
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
 To nothing this essential, happier farr  
 Then miserable to have eternal being :  
 Or if our substance be indeed Divine,  
 100 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst  
 On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel  
 Our power sufficient to disturb his Heav'n,  
 And with perpetual inroads to Allarme,  
 Though inaccessible, his fatal Throne :  
 Which if not Victory is yet Revenge.

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
 Desperate revenge, and Battel dangerous  
 To less then Gods. On th' other side up rose  
 Belial, in act more graceful and humane ;  
 A fairer person lost not Heav'n, he seem'd  
 For dignity compos'd and high exploit :  
 But all was false and hollow, though his Tongue  
 Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear  
 110 The

The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest Counsels: for his thoughts were low  
 To vice industrious, but to Nobler deeds  
 Timorous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the care,  
 And with perfwasive accent thus began.

I should be much for open Warr, O Peers,  
 As not behind in hate; if what was urg'd  
 Main reason to perfwade immediate Warr,  
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success:  
 When he who most excels in fact of Arms,  
 In what he counsels and in what excels  
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
 And utter dissolution, as the scope  
 Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
 First, what Revenge? the Towns of Heav'n are fill'd  
 With Armed watch, that render all access  
 Impregnable; oft on the bordering Deep  
 Encamp-thir Legions, or with obscure wing  
 Scout far and wide into the Realm of night,  
 Sceming surprize. Or could we break our way  
 By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise  
 With blackest Insurrection, to confound  
 Heav'n's purest Light, yet our great Enemie  
 All incorruptible would on his Throne  
 Sit unpolluted, and th' Ethereal mould  
 Incapable of stain would soon expel  
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire  
 Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
 Is flat despair: we must exasperate  
 Th' Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,  
 And that smiting us, that must be our cure,

120

130

140

To

To be no more ; sad cure ; for who would loose,  
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
 Those thoughts that wander through Eternity,  
 To perish rather, swallowd up and lost  
 150 In the wide womb of uncreated night,  
 Devoid of sense and motion ? and who knows,  
 Let this be good, whether our angry Foe  
 Can give it, or will ever ? how he can  
 Is doubtful ; that he never will is sure.  
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,  
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
 To give his Enemies thir wish, and end  
 Them in his anger, whom his anget saves  
 To punish endless ? wherefore cease we then ?  
 160 Say they who counsel Warr, we are decreed,  
 Reserv'd and destin'd to Eternal woe ;  
 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
 What can we suffer worse ? is this then worst,  
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in Arms ?  
 What when we fled a main, pursu'd and strook  
 With Heav'n's afflicting Thunder, and besought  
 The Deep to shelter us ? this Hell then seen'd  
 A refuge from those wounds : or when we lay  
 Chain'd on the burning Lake ? that sure was worse.  
 170 What if the breath that kindl'd those grim fires  
 Awak'd should blow them into sevenfold rage  
 And plung us in the Flaines ? or from above  
 Should intermitte vengeance Anne again  
 His red right hand to plague us ? what if all  
 Her stores were op'nd, and this Firmament  
 Of Hell should spout her Cataracts of Fire,  
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall

One day upon our heads ; while we perhaps  
 Designing or exhorting glorious Warr,  
 Caught in a fierie Tempest shall be hurl'd  
 Each on his rock transfixt, the sport and prey  
 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk  
 Under yon boyling Ocean, wrapt in Chains ;  
 There to converse with everlasting groans,  
 Unrespited, unpitied, unrepreev'd,  
 Ages of hopeless end ; this would be worse.  
 Warr therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
 My voice dislwades ; for what can force or guide  
 With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
 Views all things at one view ? he from heav'n's hight  
 All these our motions vain, sees and despises ;  
 Not more Almighty to reish our might  
 Then wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
 Shall we then dive thus vile, the race of Heav'n,  
 Thus tramp'l'd, thus expell'd to suffer here,  
 Chains & these Torments ? better these then worse  
 By my advice ; since fate, inevitable  
 Subdues us, and Omnipotent Decree,  
 The Victors will. To suffer, as to doe,  
 Our strength is equal, nor the Law unjust  
 That so ordains : this was at first resolv'd,  
 If we were wise, against so great a foe  
 Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
 I laugh, when those who at the Spear are bold  
 And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink and fear  
 What yet they know must follow, to endure  
 Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain.  
 The sentence of this Conquerour : This is now  
 Our doom ; which if we can sustain and bear,

210 Our Supreme Foe in time may much remit  
 His anger, and perhaps thus farr remov'd  
 Not mind us not offending, satisfi'd  
 With what is punish't ; whence these raging fires  
 Will slack'n, if his breath stir not thir flames.  
 Our purer essence then will overcome  
 Thir noxious vapour, or enur'd not feel,  
 Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd  
 In temper and in nature, will receive  
 Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ;  
 This horror will grow milde, this darknes light,  
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,  
 If we procure not to our selves more woe.  
 Thus *Belaſt* with words cloath'd in reasons garb  
 Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful floath,  
 Not peace : and after him thus *Mammon* spake.  
 Either to disenthrone the King of Heav'a  
 230 We warr, if warr be best, or to regain  
 Our own right lost : him to unthrone we then  
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yeild  
 To fickle Chance, and *Chaos* judge the strife :  
 The former vain to hope argues as vain  
 The latter : for what place can be for us  
 Within Heav'n's bound, unless Heav'n's Lord su-  
 We overpower ? Suppose he should relent (pream  
 And publish Grace to all, on promise made  
 Of new Subjection ; with what eyes could we  
 240 Stand in his presente humble, and receive  
 Strict Laws impos'd, to celebrate his Throne

With

With warbl'd Hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
 Forc't Halleluiah's ; while he Lordly sits  
 Our envied Sovran, and his Altar breathes  
 Ambrosial Odours and Ambrosial Flowers,  
 Our servile offeringz. This must be our task  
 In Heav'n, this our delight ; how wearisom  
 Eternity so spent in worship paid  
 To whom we hate. Let us not then pursue  
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd  
 Unacceptable, though in Heav'n, our state  
 Of splendid vassalage, but rather seek  
 Our own good from our selves, and from our own  
 Live to our selves, though in this vast recess,  
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
 Hard liberty before the easie yoke.  
 Of servile Pomp. Our greatness will appear  
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverſe  
 We can create, and in what place so e're  
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain  
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
 Of darkness do we dread ? How oft amidst  
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heav'n's all-ruling Sire  
 Choose to reside, his Glory unobscur'd,  
 And with the Majesty of darkness round  
 Covers his Throne ; from whence deep thunders roar  
 Must ring this cage, and Heav'n resembles Hell.  
 As he our Darkness, cannot we his Light  
 Imitate when we please ? This Desert soile  
 Wants not her hidden lustre, Gems and Gold ;  
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
 Magnificence ; and what can Heav'n shew more ?

## Book 2. *Paradise lost.*

Our torments also may in length of time  
Become our Elements, these piercing Fires  
As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd  
Into their temper ; which must needs remove  
The sensible of pain. All things invite

280 To peaceful Counsels, and the settl'd State  
Of order, how in safety best we may  
Compose our present evils, with regard  
Of what we are and where, dismissing quite  
All thoughts of Warr : ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finisht, when such mormur fill'd  
Th' Assembly, as when hollow Rocks retain  
The sound of blustering winds, which all night long  
Had roas'd the Sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
Sea-faring men orewatcht, whose Bark by chance  
Or Pinnace anchors in a craggy Bay

290 After the Tempest : Such applause was heard  
As *Mammon* ended, and his Sentence pleas'd,  
Advising peace : for such another Field  
They dreaded worse then Hell : so much the fear  
Of Thunder and the Sword of *Michael*  
Wrought still within them ; and no les desire

To found this nether Empire, which might rise  
By policy, and long procel of time,  
In emulation opposite to Heav'n.  
Which when *Sat*an except, none higher sat, with grave  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
A Pillar of State ; deep on his Front engraven  
Deliberation sat and publick care,  
And Princely counsel in his face yet shon,  
Majestick though in ruin : sage he stood

With

With *Atlas* shoulders fit to bear  
 The weight of mightiest Monarchies; his look  
 Drew audience and attention still as Night  
 Or Summers Noon-tide air, while thus he spake.  
 Thrones and imperial Powers, off-spring of heav'n,  
 Ethereal Virtues; or these Titles now 310  
 Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd  
 Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote  
 Inclines, hereto continue, and build up here  
 A growing Empire; doubtless, while we dream,  
 And know not that the King of Heav'n hath doom'd  
 This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat  
 Beyond his Potent arm, to live exempt  
 From Heav'n's high jurisdiction, in new League  
 Banded against his Throne, but to remaine  
 In strictest bonds;e, though thus far remov'd,  
 Under the inevitable curb, reserv'd  
 His captive multitude: For he, be sure,  
 In hight or depth, still first and last will Reign  
 Sole King, and of his Kingdom loose no part  
 By out revolt, but over Hell extend  
 His Empire, and with Iron Scepter rule  
 Us here, as with his Golden those in Heav'n.  
 What fit we then projecting Peace and War?  
 War hath determin'd us, and soild with loss  
 Irreparable; *tearms* of peace yet none  
 Voutsaf't or sought; for what peace will be giv'n  
 To us enslav'd, but custody severe,  
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
 Inflicted? and what peace can we return,  
 But to our power hostility and hate,  
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,  
 Yet

320

330

Yet ever plotting how the Conquerour least  
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice  
 340 In doing what we most in suffering feel?  
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
 With dangerous expedition to invade  
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or Siege,  
 Or ambush from the Deep. What if we find  
 Some easier enterprize? There is a place  
 ( If ancient and prophetic fame in Heav'n,  
 Err not ) another World, the happy seat  
 Of som new Race call'd *Man*, about this time  
 To be created like to us, though less  
 350 In power and excellence, but favour'd more  
 Of him who rules above; so was his will  
 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an Oath,  
 That shook Heav'n's whol circumference, confirm'd.  
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
 What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,  
 Or substance, how endu'd, and what thir Power,  
 And where thir weakness, how attempted best,  
 By force or suttletry: Though Heav'n be shut,  
 And Heav'n's high Arbitrator fit secure  
 366 In his own strength, this place may lye expos'd  
 The utmost border of his Kingdom, left  
 To their defence who hold it: a hero perhaps  
 Som advantagious act may be achiev'd  
 By sudden onset, either with Hell fire  
 To waste his whole Creation, or possess  
 All as our own, and drive as we were driven,  
 The punie habitants, or if not drive,  
 Seduce them to our Party, that thir God  
 May prove thir foe, and with repenting hand

Abo-

Paradise lost. Book 2.

Abolish his own works. This would surpass  
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
In our Confusion, and our Joy upraise  
In his disturbance; when his darling Sons  
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
Thir frail Originals, and faded bliss,  
Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth  
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
Hatching vain Empires. Thus *Bezebub*  
Pleaded his devilish Counsel, first devis'd  
By *Satan*, and in part propos'd: for whence,  
But from the Author of all ill could Spring  
So deep a malice, to confound the race  
Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
The great Creatour? But thir spite still serves  
His glory to augment. The bold design  
Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy  
Sparkl'd in all thir eyes; with full assent  
They vote: whereat his speech he thus renewes.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,  
Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,  
Great things resolv'd; which from the lowest deep  
Will once more lift us up, in spight of Fate,  
Neerer our ancient Seat; perhaps in view  
Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring  
And opportune excursion we may chance (Arms  
Re-enter Heav'n; or else in some milde Zone  
Dwell not unvisited of Heav'n's fair Light  
Secure, and at the brightning Orient beam  
Purge off this gloom; the soft delicious Air,  
To heal the scars of these corrosive Fires.

370

380

390

400

Shall

Shall breath her balme. But first whom shall we send  
In search of this new world, whom shall we find  
Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandring feet  
The dark unbottom'd infinite Abyss  
And through the palpable obscure find out  
His uncouth way, or spread his aerie flight  
Upborn with indefatigable wings  
Over the vast abrupt; ere he arrive

410 The happy He; what strength, what art can then  
Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe  
Through the strict Senteries and Stations thick  
Of Angels watching round? Here he had need  
All circumspection, and we now no less  
Choice in our suffrage; for on whom we send,  
The weight of all and our last hope relies.

This said, he sat; and expectation held  
His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
To second, or oppose, or undertake  
420 The perilous attempt: but all sat mute,  
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; & each  
In others count'nance red his own dismay  
Astonish't: none among the choice and prime  
Of those Heav'n-warring Champions could be  
So hardie as to proffer or accept  
430 Alone the dreadful voyage, till at last  
Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd  
Above his fellows, with Monarchal pride  
Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

O Progeny of Heav'n, Empyreal Thrones,  
With reason hath deep silence and demurr  
Seis'd us, though undismaid: long is the way  
And hard, that out of Hell leads up to Light;

Our

Our prison strong, this huge convex of Fire,  
Outrageous to devour, immures us round  
Ninefold, and gates of burning Adamant  
Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.

These past, if any pass, the void profound  
Of unessential Night receives him next.  
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being  
Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he scape into what ever world,  
Or unknown Region, what remains him less  
Then unknown dangers and as hard escape.

But I should ill become this Throne, O Peers,  
And this Imperial Sov'rancy, adorn'd  
With splendor, arm'd with power, if aught pro-  
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape (pos'd  
Of difficulty or danger could deterre  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume  
These Royalties, and not refuse to Reign,

Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
To him who Reigns, and so much to him due  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest  
High honour'd fits? Go therfore mighty powers,  
Terror of Heav'n, though fall'n; intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render Hell

More tollerable; if there be cure or charm  
To respite or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill Mansion: intermit no watch  
Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek  
Deliverance for us all: this enterprize

440

450

460

None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose  
The Monarch, and prevented all reply,  
Prudent, least from his resolution rais'd  
Others among the chief might offer now  
470 ( Certain to be refus'd ) what erst they feard ;  
And so refus'd might in opinion stand  
His rivals, winning cheap the high repute  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more th' adventure then his voice  
Forbidding ; and at once with him they rose ;  
Thir rising all at once was as the sound  
Of Thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
With awful reverence prone ; and as a God  
Extoll him equal to the highest in Heav'n :  
480 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,  
That for the general safety he despis'd  
His own : for neither do the Spirits damn'd  
Loose all thir vertue ; least bad men should boast  
Thir specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,  
Or close ambition varnish't o're with zeal.  
Thus they thir doubtful consultations dark  
Ended rejoicing in thir matchless Chief :  
As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds  
Ascending, while the North wind sleeps, o'respread  
490 Heav'n's cheerful face, the lowring Element  
Scowls ore the dark'd lantskip Snow, or showre ;  
If chance the radiant Sun with farewell sweet  
Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,  
The birds thir notes renew, and bleating herds  
Attest thir joy, that hill and valley rings.  
O shame to men ! Devil with Devil damn'd  
Firm concord holds, men onely disagree

Of Creatures rational, though under hope  
 Of heavenly Grace : and God proclaiming peace,  
 Yet live in hatred, enmitie, and strife  
 Among themselves, and levie cruel warres,  
 Wasting the Earth, each other to destroy :  
 As if (which might induce us to accord)  
 Man had not hellish foes now besides,  
 That day and night for his destruction waite.

500

The *Stygian* Councel thus dissolv'd; and forth  
 In order came the grand infernal Peers,  
 Midst came thir mighty Paramount, and seemd  
 Alone th' Antagonist of Heav'n, nor less  
 Then Hells dread Emperour with pomp Supream,  
 And God-like imitated State; high round  
 A Globe of fierie Seraphim inclos'd  
 With bright imblazonie, and horrent Arms.  
 Then of thir Session ended they bid cry  
 With Trumpets regal sound the great result:  
 Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
 Put to thir mouths the sounding Alchymie  
 By Haralds voice explain'd: the hollow Abyss  
 Heard farr and wide, and all the host of Hell  
 With deafning shout, return'd them loud acclaim. 510  
 Thence more at ease thir minds and somwhat rais'd  
 By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers  
 Disband, and wandring, each his severall way  
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
 Leads him perplext, where he may likeliest find  
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
 The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.  
 Part on the Plain, or in the Air sublime  
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,

510

520

## Book 2. *Paradise lost.*

530 As at th' Olympian Games or *Pythian* fields;  
Part curb thir fierie Steeds, or shun the Goal  
With rapid wheels, or fronted Brigads form.  
As when to warn proud Cities warr appears  
Wag'd in the troubl'd Skie, and Armies rush  
To Battel in the Clouds, before each Van  
Prie forth the Aerie Knights, and couch thir spears  
Till thickest Legions close; with feats of Arms  
From either end of Heav'n the welkin burns.  
Others with vast *Typhæan* rage more fell  
540 Rend up both Rocks and Hills, and ride the Air  
In whirlwind; Hell scarce holds the wilde uproar.  
As when *Alcides* from *Oealia* Crown'd  
With conquest, felt th' envenom'd robe, and tore  
Through pain up by the roots *Thebætan* Pines,  
And *Lichas* from the top of *Oeta* threw.  
Into th' *Euboic* Sea. Others more milde,  
Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
With notes Angelical to many a Harp  
Thir own Heroic deeds and hapless fall  
550 By doom of Battel; and complain that Fate  
Free Vertue should enthrall to Force or Chance.  
Thir song was partial, but the harmony  
(What could it les when Spirits immortal sing?)  
Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment  
The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet  
(For Eloquence the Soul, Song charms the Sense,)  
Others apart sat on a Hill retir'd,  
In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high  
Of Providence, Foreknowledge, Will, and Fate,  
560 Fixt Fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute,  
And found no end, in wandring mazes lost.

Of good and evil much they argu'd then,  
Of happiness and final misery,  
Passion and Apathie, and glory and shame,  
Vain wisdom all, and false Philosophie :  
Yet with a pleasing sorcerie could charm  
Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured brest  
With stubborn patience as with triple steel.  
Another part in Squadrons and gross Bands,  
On bold adventure to discover wide  
That dismal world, if any Clime perhaps  
Might yeild them easier habitation, bend  
Four ways thir flying March, along the Banks  
Of four infernal Rivers that disgorge  
Into the burning Lake thir baleful streams ;  
Abhorred *Styx* the flood of deadly hate,  
Sad *Acheron* of sorrow, black and deep ;  
*Cocytus*, nam'd of lamentation loud  
Heard on the rusful stream ; fierce *Phlegon*  
Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
Farr off from these a slow and silent stream,  
*Lethe* the River of Oblivion roules  
Her watrie Labyrinth, whereof who drinks,  
Forthwith his former state and being forgets,  
Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
Beyond this flood a frozen Continent  
Lies dark and wilde, beat with perpetual storms  
Of Whirlwind and dire Hail, which on firm land  
Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems  
Of ancient pile ; all else deep snow and ice,  
A gulf profound as that *Serbonian Bog*  
Betwixt *Damiata* and mount *Cæsus* old,

570

580

590

Where

Where Armies whole have sunk: the parching Air  
Burns frore, and cold performs th' effect of Fire.  
Thither by harpy-footed Furies hail'd,  
At certain revolutions all the damn'd  
Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change  
Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
From Beds of raging Fire to starve in Ice  
600 Thir soft Ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
Immovable, infixt, and frozen round,  
Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.  
They ferry over this *Lethæan* Sound  
Both to and fro, thir sorrow to augment,  
And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach  
The tempting stream, with one small drop to loose  
In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
All in one moment, and so neer the brink;  
610 But fate withstands, and to oppose th' attempt  
*Medusa* with *Gorgonian* terror guards  
The Ford, and of it self the water flies  
All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
The lip of *Tantalus*. Thus roving on  
In confus'd march forlorn, th' adventurous Bands  
With shuddring horror pale, and eyes agast  
View'd first thir lamentable lot, and found  
No rest: through many a dark and dreearie Vaile  
They pass'd, and many a Region dolorous,  
620 O're many a Frozen, many a Ferie Alpe,  
Rocks, Caves, Lakes, Fens, Bogs, Dens, and shades of  
A Universe of death, which God by curse (death,  
Created evil, for evil only good,  
Where all life dies; death lives, and nature breeds,  
Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,

Abomi-

Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
Then Fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
*Gorgons* and *Hydra's*, and *Chimera's* dire.

Mean while the Adversary of God and Man,  
*Satan* with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,  
Puts on swift wings, and toward the Gates of Hell  
Explores his solitary flight; som times  
He scours the right hand coast, som times the left,  
Now shaves with level wing the Deep, then soares  
Up to the fiery concave touring high.

630

As when farr off at Sea a Fleet descri'd  
Hangs in the Clouds, by *Aequinoctial* Winds  
Close sailing from *Bengala*, or the Iles  
Of *Ternate* and *Tidore*, whence Merchants bring  
Thir spicie Drugs: they on the trading Flood  
Through the wide *Ethiopian* to the Cape  
Ply stemming nightly toward the Pole. So seem'd  
Farr off the flying Fiend: at last appear  
Hell bounds high reaching to the horrid Roof,  
And thrice threefold the Gates; three folds were  
Three Iron, three of Adamantine Rock, (Bras,  
Impenitral, impal'd with circling fire,  
Yet unconsuin'd. Before the Gates there sat

640

On either side a formidable shape;  
The one seem'd Woman to the waste, and fair,  
But ended foul in many a scaly foul  
Voluminous and vast, a Serpent arm'd  
With mortal sting: about her middle round  
A cry of Hell Hounds never ceasing bark'd  
With wide *Cerberean* mouths full loud, and rung  
A hideous Peal: yet, when they list, would creep,  
If aught disturb'd thir noyse, into her woomb,

650

And

And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd  
Within unseen. Farr less abhorrd then these  
660 Vex'd *Scylla* bathing in the Sea that parts  
*Calabria* from the hoarce *Trinacrian* shore :  
Nor uglier follow the Night-Hag, when call'd  
In secret, riding through the Air she comes  
Lur'd with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
With *Lapland* Witches, while the labouring Moon  
Eclipses at thir charms. The other shape,  
If shape it might be call'd that shape had none  
Distinguishable in member, joyn't, or limb,  
Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,  
670 For each seem'd either ; black it stood as Night,  
Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
And shook a dreadful Dart ; what seem'd his head  
The likeness of a Kingly Crown had on.  
*Satan* was now at hand, and from his seat  
The Monster moving onward came as fast,  
With horrid strides, Hell trembled as he strode.  
Th' undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,  
Admir'd, not fear'd ; God and his Son except,  
Created thing naught vallu'd he nor shun'd ;  
680 And with disdainful look thus first began.  
Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,  
That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance  
Thy miscreated Front athwart my way  
To yonder Gates ; through them I mean to pass,  
That be assur'd, without leave askt of thee :  
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,  
Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heav'n.  
To whom the Goblin full of wrauth reply'd,  
Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou hee,

Who

Who first broke peace in Héay'n and Faith till then 690.  
 Unbrok'n, and in proud rebellious Arms  
 Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Sons  
 Conjur'd against the highest, for which both Thou  
 And they outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
 To waste Eternal daies in woe and pain ?  
 And reck'n'st thou thy self with Spirits of Heav'n,  
 Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,  
 Where I reign King, and to enrage thee more,  
 Thy King and Lord ? Back to thy punishment,  
 False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,  
 Least with a whip of Scorpions I pursue  
 Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this Dart,  
 Strange horror seise thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grieslie terour, and in shape,  
 So speaking and so threatening, grew ten fold  
 More dreadful and deform : on th' other side  
 Incenc't with indignation *Satan* stood  
 Utterfis'd, and like a Comet burn'd,  
 That fires the length of *Ophiusus* huge  
 In th' Artick Sky, and from his horrid hair  
 Shakes Pestilence and Warr. Each at the Head  
 Level'd his deadly aime ; thir fatall hands  
 No second stroke intend, and such a frown  
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black Clouds  
 With Heav'n's Artillery fraught, come rattling on  
 Over the *Caspian*, then stand front to front  
 Hov'ring a space, till Winds the signal blow  
 To joyn thir dark Encounter in mid air :  
 So frownd the mighty Combatants, that Hell  
 Grew darker at thir frown, so matcht they stood ;  
 For never but once more was either like

700

710

720

To meet so great a foe : and now great deeds  
 Had been achiev'd, whereof all Hell had rung,  
 Had got the Snakie Sorceress that sat  
 Fast by Hell Gate, and kept the fatal Key,  
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry ruffid between.

O Father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,  
 Against thy only Son ? What fury O Son,  
 Possesses thee to bide that mortal Dart  
 730 Against thy Fathers head ? and know'st for whom,  
 For him who sits above and laughs the while  
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
 What e're his wrath, which he calls Justice, bids,  
 His wrath which one day will destroy ye both.

She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest  
 Forbore, then these to her ~~Satan~~ return'd :

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand  
 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
 740 What it intends ; till first I know of thee,  
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why  
 In this infernal Vaile first met thou call'st  
 Me Father, and that Fantasy call'st my Son ?  
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
 Sight more detestable then him and thee.

To whom thus the Portress of Hell Gate reply'd,  
 Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
 Now in thine eye so foul, once deem'd so fair  
 In Heav'n, when at th' Assembly, and in sight  
 750 Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd  
 In bold conspiracy against Heav'n's King,  
 All on a sudden miserable pain  
 Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzie twum'd.

In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
Threw forth, till on the left side op'ning wide,  
Likest to thee in shape and count'rance bright,  
Then shining heav'nly fair, a Goddes arm'd  
Out of thy head I sprung : amazement seis'd  
All th' Host of Heav'n ; back they recoild affraid  
At first, and call'd the *sin*, and for a Sign  
Portentous held me ; but familiar grown,  
I pleas'd, and with attractive graces wot  
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
Thy self in me thy perfect image viewing  
Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st  
With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd  
A growing burden. Mean while Warr arose,  
And fields were fought in Heav'n ; wherein remain'd  
( For what could else ) to our Almighty Foe  
Cleer Victory, to our part loss and rout  
Through all the Empyrean : down they fell  
Driv'n headlong from the Pitch of Heaven, down  
Into this Deep, and in the general fall  
I also ; at which time this powerful Key  
Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep  
These Gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
Without my op'ning. Pensive here I sat  
Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb  
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown  
Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.  
At last this odious offspring whom thou seest  
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way  
Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain  
Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
Transform'd : but he my inbred enemie

760

770

780

Forth issu'd, brandishing his fatal Dart  
 Made to destroy : I fled, and cry'd out *Death* ;  
 Hell trembl'd at the hideous Name, and sigh'd  
 From all her Caves, and back resounded *Death*.  
 790 I fled, but he pursu'd (though more, it seems,  
 Inflam'd with lust then rage,) and swifter far,  
 Me overtook his mother all dismaid,  
 And in embraces forcible and foule  
 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot  
 These yelling Monsters that with ceasles cry  
 Surround me, as thou sawst, hourly conceiv'd  
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
 To me, for when they list into the womb  
 That bred them they return, and howle and gnaw  
 800 My Bowels, their repast ; then bursting forth  
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,  
 That rest or intermission none I find.  
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
 Grim *Death* my Son and foe, who sets them on,  
 And me his Parent would full soon devour  
 For want of other prey, but that he knows  
 His end with mine involvd ; and knows that I  
 Should prove a bitter Morsel, and his bane,  
 When ever that shall be ; so Fate pronounc'd.  
 810 But thou O Father, I forewarn thee, shun  
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope  
 To be invulnerable in those bright Arms,  
 Though temper'd heav'ly, for that mortal dint,  
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist.  
 She finish'd, and the subtle Fiend his lõre  
 Soon learnt, now milder, and thus answerd smooth.  
 Dear Daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy Sire,  
 And

And my fair Son, here shewst me, the dear pledge,  
Of dalliance had with thee in Heav'n, and joys  
Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire 820  
Befalln us unforeseen, unthought of, know (change  
I come no enemie, but to set free  
From out this dark and dismal house of pain,  
Both him and thee, and all the heav'ly Host  
Of Spirits that in our just pretenses arm'd  
Fell with us from on high: from them I go  
This uncouth errand sole, and one for all  
My self expose, with lonely steps to tread  
Th' unfounded deep, & through the void immense  
To search with wandring quest a place foretold 830  
Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
Created vast and round, a place of bliss  
In the Pourlieues of Heav'n, and therein plac't  
A race of upstart Creatures, to supply  
Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,  
Least Heav'n lurcharg'd with potent multitude  
Might hap to move new broiles: Be this or aught  
Then this more secret, now design'd, I haste 838  
To know, and this once known, shall soon return,  
And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death  
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
Wing silently the buxom Air, imbalm'd  
With odours; there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.  
He ceas'd, for both seemed highly pleasd, and Death  
Grinnd horrible a gasty smile, to hear  
His famine should be fill'd, and blest his mawe  
Destin'd to that good hour: no less rejoyc'd  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her Sire, 858

850 The key of this infernal Pit by due,  
 And by command of Heav'n's all-powerful King  
 I keep, by him forbidden to unlock  
 These Adamantine Gates ; against all force  
 Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
 Fearless to be o'rematch'd by living might.  
 But what now I to his commands above  
 Who hates me, and hath hitherto thrust me down  
 Into this gloom of *Tartarus* profound,  
 To sit in hateful Office here confin'd,  
 860 Inhabitant of Heav'n, and heav'nlie-born,  
 Here in perpetual agonie and pain,  
 With terrors and with clamors compasst round  
 Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed :  
 Thou art my Father, thou my Author, thou  
 My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey  
 But thee, whom follow ? thou wilt bring me soon  
 To that new world of light and bliss, among  
 The Gods who live at ease, where I shall Reign  
 At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
 870 Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.  
 Thus saying, from her side the fatal Key,  
 Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;  
 And towards the Gate rouling her bestial train,  
 Forthwith the huge Porcullis high up drew,  
 Which but herself not all the *Stygian* powers  
 Could once have mov'd ; then in the key-hole turns  
 Th' intricate wards, and every Bolt and Bar  
 Of massie Iron or solid Rock with ease  
 Unfast'ns : on a sudden op'n file  
 880 With impetuous recoile and jarring sound  
 Th' infernal dores, and on th' hinges great

Harsh Thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
 Of Erebus. She op'd, but to shut  
 Excel'd her power ; the Gates wide op'n stood,  
 That with extended wings a Bann'd Host  
 Under spread Ensigns marching right pass through  
 With Horse and Chariots rankt in loose array ;  
 So wide they stood, and like a Furnace mouth  
 Cast forth redounding smoak and ruddy flame.

Before thir eyes in sudden view appear  
 The secrets of the hoarie deep, a dark  
 Illimitable Ocean without bound, 890  
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, and  
 And time and place are lost ; where eldest Night  
 And *Chaos*, Ancestors of Nature, hold  
 Eternal *Anarchie*, amidst the noise  
 Of endless warrs, and by confusion stand.  
 For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four Champions fierce  
 Strive here for Maistrie, and to Battel bring  
 Thir embryon Atoms ; they around the flag  
 Of each his faction, in thir several Clans,

Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift or slow,  
 Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the Sands.  
 Of *Barca* or *Cyrene's* torrid soil,  
 Levied to side with warring Winds, and poise  
 Thir lighter wings. To whom these most adhere,  
 Hee rules a moment ; *Chaos* Umpire sits,  
 And by decision more imbroiles the fray  
 By which he Reigns : next him high Arbitre  
*Chance* governs all. Into this wilde Abyss,  
 The Womb of nature and perhaps her Grive,  
 Of neither Sea, nor Shore, nor Air, nor Fire,  
 But all these in thir pregnant caules mixt

890

900

910

Con-

Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
Unless th' Almighty Maker them ordain  
His dark materials to create more Worlds,  
Into this wilde Abyss the warie fiend  
920 Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,  
Pondering his Voyage; for no narrow frith  
He had to cross. Nor was his care less peal'd  
With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
Great things with small) then when ~~Bellona~~ storms,  
With all her battering Engines bent to rase  
Som Capital City, or less then if this frame  
Of Heav'n were falling, and these Elements  
In mutinie had from her Axle torn  
The stedfast Earth. At last his Sail-broad Vannes  
He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoak  
Uplifted spurns the ground, thence many a League  
930 As in a cloudy Chair ascending rides  
Audacious, but that seat soon failing, meets  
A vast vacuitie: all unawares  
Fluttering his pennons vain plumb down he drops  
Ten thousand fadom deep, and to this hour  
Down had been falling, had not by ill chance  
The strong rebuff of som tumultuous cloud  
Instinct with Fire and Nitre hurried him  
As many miles aloft: that furie stay'd,  
Quencht in a Boggie ~~syris~~, neither Sea,  
940 Nor good dry Land: nigh founderd on he fares,  
Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
Half flying; behaves him now both Oare and Saile.  
As when a Gryfon through the Wilderness  
819 With winged course o're Hill or moarie Dale,  
Pursues the ~~Arimaspians~~, who by stealth

Had

## Paradise lost. Book 2.

Had from his wakeful custody purloind  
The guarded Gold : So eagerly the fiend  
Orebog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
With head, hands, wings, or feet pursues his way,  
And swims or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies : 950  
At length a universal hubbub wilde  
Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd  
Born through the hollow dark assaults his eare  
With loudest vehemence : thither he pleyes,  
Undaunted to meet there what ever power.  
Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss  
Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
Which way the neerest coast of darknes lyes  
Bordering on light; when strait behold the Throne  
Of *Obsis*, and his dark Pavilion spread  
Wide o'er the wasteful Deep ; with him Enthron'd  
Sat Sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
The consort of his Reign ; and by them stood  
*Orcus* and *Ades*, and the dreaded name  
Of *Demogorgon* ; Rumor next and Chance,  
And Tuunult and Confusion all imbroild,  
And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

T' whom *Satan* turning boldly, thus. Ye Powers  
And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,  
*Chaos* and *ancient Night*, I come no Spie,  
With purpose to explore or to disturb  
The seerets of your Realm, but by constraint  
Wandring this darksome desart, as my way  
Lies through your spacious Empire up to light,  
Alone ; and without guide, half lost, I seek  
What readiest path leads where your gloomie  
Confine with Heav'n; or if som other place (bounds

950

960

970

From your Dominion won, th' Ethereal King  
980 Possessest lately, thither to arrive

I travel this profound, direct my course;  
Directed, no mean recompence it brings

To your behoof; if I that Region lost,  
All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce

To her original darkness and your sway  
(Which is my present journey), and once more

Erect the Standerd there of ancient Night;

Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.

Thus Satan; and him thus the Anarchold

With faulting speech and visage incompos'd  
990 Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,

That mighty leading Angel, who of late  
Made head against Heav'n's King, though over-

I saw and heard, for such a numerous host (thrown  
Fled not in silence through the frighted deep

With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded; and Heav'n Gates

Poured out by millions her victorious Bands

Pursuing, upon my Frontiers here  
Keep residence; if all I can will serve,

That little which is left so to defend  
Encroacht on still through our intestine broiles

Weakening the Scepter of old Night: first Hell  
Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath;

Now lately Heaven and Earth, another World  
Hung o're my Realm, link'd in a golden Chain

To that side Heav'n from whence your Legions fell:  
If that way be your walk, you have not far

So much the nearer danger; goe and speeds  
Havock and spoil and ruin are my gain.

He

He ceas'd ; and *Satān* staid not to reply, 1010  
 But glad that now his Sea should find a shore,  
 With fresh alacritie and force renew'd  
 Springs upward like a Pyramid of fire  
 Into the wilde expanse, and through the shock  
 Of fighting Elements, on all sides round  
 Environ'd wins his way ; harder beset  
 And more endanger'd, then when *Argo* pass'd  
 Through *Bosporus* betwixt the justling Rocks :  
 Or when *Ulysses* on the Larbord shunnd  
*Charybdis*, and by th' other whirlpool steard. 1020  
 So he with difficulty and labour hard  
 Mov'd on, with difficulty and labour hee ;  
 But hee once past, soon after when man fell,  
 Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
 Following his track, such was the will of Heavn',  
 Pav'd after him a broad and beat'n way  
 Over the dark *Abyss*, whose boiling Gulf  
 Tamely endur'd a Bridge of wondrous length  
 From Hellcontinu'd reaching th' utmost Orbe  
 Of this frail World ; by which the Spirits perverse 1030  
 With easie intercourse pass to and fro  
 To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
 God and good Angels guard by special grace.  
 But now at last the sacred influence  
 Of light appears, and from the walls of Heavn'  
 Shoots farr into th' bosom of dim Night  
 A glimmering dawn ; here Nature first begins  
 Her fardest verge, and *Chaos* to retire  
 As from her outmost works a brok'n foe  
 With tumult less and with less hostile din, 1040  
 That *Satan* with less toil, and now with ease

Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light  
And like a weather-beaten Vessel holds  
Gladly the Port, though Shrouds and Tackles torn;  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling Air,  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Farr off th' Empyreal Heav'n, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermined square or round;  
With Opal Towns and Battlements adorn'd  
1050 Of living Saphire, once his native Seat;  
And fast by hanging in a golden Chain  
This pendant world, in bigness as a Starr  
Of smallest Magnitude close by the Moon.  
Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurst, and in a cursed hour he hies.

*The End of the Second Book.*

P A R A



# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK III.

---

**H**ail holy light, offspring of Heav'n first-born,  
Or of th' Eternal Coeternal beam  
May I express thee unblam'd? since God is  
(light,

And never but in unapproached light  
Dwelt from Eternitie, dwelt then in thee,  
Bright effuence of bright essence increase.  
Or hear'st thou rather pure Ethereal stream,  
Whose Fountain who shall tell? before the Sun,  
Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice  
Of God, as with a Mantle didst invest  
The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
Won from the void and formless infinite.  
Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
Escap't the *Stygian* Pool, though long detain'd  
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight  
Through utter and through middle darkness borne  
With

With other notes then to th' *Orphean Lyre*  
I sung of *Chaos* and *Eternal Night*,  
Taught by the heav'nly Muse to venture down  
The dark descent, and up to reascend,  
Though hard and rare : thee I revisit safe,  
And feel thy sovran vital Lamp ; but thou  
Revisit'st not these eyes, that rowle in vain  
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;  
So thick a drop serene hath quencht thir Orbs,  
Or dim suffusion veild. Yet not the more  
Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt  
Cleer Spring, or shadie Grove, or Sunnie Hill,  
Smit with the love of sacred song ; but chief  
Thee *Sion* and the flowrie Brooks beneath  
That wash thy hallowd feet, and warbling flow,  
Nightly I visit : nor somtimes forget  
Those other two equal'd with me in Fate,  
So were I equal'd with them in renown,  
Blind *Thamyris* and blind *Maenides*,  
And *Tiresias* and *Phimens* Prophets old.  
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntarie move  
Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful Bird  
Sings darkling, and in shadie Covert hid  
Tunes her nocturnal Note. Thus with the Year  
Seasons return, but not to me returns  
Day, or the sweet approach of Ev'n or Morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom, or Summers Rose,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ;  
But cloud in stead, and ever-during dark  
Surrounds me, from the cheerful waies of men  
Cut off, and for the Book of knowledg fair  
Presented with a Universal blanc

Of Natures works to mee expung'd and ras'd,  
And wisdoime at one entrance quite shut out.  
So much the rather thou Celestial light  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
Of things invisible to mortal sight.

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
From the pure Empyrean where he sits  
High Thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye,  
His own works and their works at once to view:  
About him all the Sanctities of Heaven  
Stood thick as Starrs, and from his sight receiv'd  
Beatitude past utterance; on his right  
The radiant image of his Glory sat,  
His onely Son; On Earth he first beheld  
Our two first Parents, yet the onely two  
Of mankind, in the happie Garden plac't,  
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love  
In blissful solitude; he then survey'd  
Hell and the Gulf between, and *Satan* there  
Coasting the wall of Heav'n on this side Night  
In the dun Air sublime, and ready now  
To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet  
On the bare outsidg of this World, that seem'd  
Firm land imbosom'd without Firmament,  
Uncertain which, in Ocean or in Air.  
Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
Wherein past, present, future he beholds,  
Thus to his onely Son foreseeing spake.

Onely begotten Son, seest thou what rage

Transports

50

60

70

80

Transports our adversarie, whom no bounds  
Prescrib'd, no barrs of Hell, nor all the chains  
Heapt on him there, nor yet the main Abyss  
Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems  
On desperat revenge, that shall redound  
Upon his own rebellious head. And now  
Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way  
Not farr off Heav'n, in the Precincts of light,  
Directly towards the new created World,

90 And Man there plac't, with purpose to assay  
If him by force he can destroy, or worse,  
By som false guile pervert; and shall pervert;  
For man will heark'n to his glozing lyes,  
And easily transgres the sole Command,  
Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall  
Hee and his faithles Progenie? whose fault?  
Whose but his own? ingrate, he had of mee  
All he could have; I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.

100 Such I created all th' Ethereal Powers  
And Spirits, both them who stood & them who faild;  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not free, what proof could they have givn sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant Faith or Love,  
Wherē onely what they needs must do, appeard,  
Not what they would? what praise could they re-  
What pleasure I from such obedience paid, (ceive?)  
When Will and Reason (Reason also is choice)  
Useles and vain, of freedom both despoidl,  
Made passive both, had servd necessarie,  
Not mee. They therefore as to right belonged,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse.

Thir maker, or thir making, or thir Fate ;  
As if Predestination over-rul'd  
Thir will, dispos'd by absolute Decree  
Or high foreknowledge ; they themselves decreed  
Thir own revolt, not I : if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no les prov'd certain unforeknown.  
So without least impulse or shadow of Fate, 120  
Or aught by me immutablit foreseen,  
They trespass, Authors to themselves in all  
Both what they judge and what they choose; for so  
I formd them free, and free they must remain,  
Till they enthrall themselves : I else must change  
Thir nature, and revoke the high Decree  
Unchangeable, Eternal, which ordain'd  
This freedom, they themselves ordain'd thir fall.  
The first sort by thir own suggestion fell,  
Self-tempted, self-deprav'd : Man falls deceiv'd 130  
By the other first : Man therefore shall find grace,  
The other none : in Mercy and Justice both,  
Through Heav'n and Earth, so shall my glorie excel,  
But Mercy first and last shall brightest shine.

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
All Heav'n, and in the blessed Spirits elect  
Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd :  
Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
Most glorious, in him all his Father shon  
Substantially express'd, and in his face  
Divine compassion visibly appeerd,  
Love without end, and without measure Grace,  
Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd

Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace ;  
For which both Heav'n and Earth shall high extoll  
Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound  
Of Hymns and sacred Songs, wherewith thy Throne  
Encompas'd shall resound thee ever blest.

150 For should Man finally be lost, should Man  
Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest Son  
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though joyn'd  
With his own folly ? that be from thee farr,  
That farr be from thee, Father, who art Judge  
Of all things made, and judgest onely right.

Or shall the Adversarie thus obtain  
His end, and frustrate thine, shall he fulfill  
His malice, and thy goodnes bring to naught,  
Or proud return though to his heavier doom,  
160 Yet with revenge accomplisht and to Hell  
Draw after him the whole Race of mankind,  
By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thy self  
Abolish thy Creation, and unmake,  
For him, what for thy glorie thou hast made ?  
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both  
Be questiond and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creatour thus reply'd.  
O Son, in whom my Soul hath chief delight,  
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
170 My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,  
All hast thou spok'n as my thoughts are, all  
As my Eternal purpose hath decreed :  
Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,  
Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
Freely voutsaf't, once more I will renew  
His lapsed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd

By

By sin to foul exorbitant desires ;  
 Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
 On even ground against his mortal foe,  
 By me upheld, that he may know how frail  
 His fall'n condition is, and to me owe  
 All his deliv'rance, and to none but me. 180

Some I have chosen of peculiar grace  
 Elect above the rest ; so is my will :  
 The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warnd  
 Thir sinful state, and to appease betimes  
 Th' incensed Deitie, while offerd grace  
 Invites ; for I will cheer thir senses dark,  
 What may suffice, and soft'n stonie hearts  
 To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190

To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
 Though but endevord with sincere intent,  
 Mine eare shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
 And I will place within them as a guide  
 My Umpire *Conscience*, whom if they will hear,  
 Light after light well us'd they shall attain,  
 And to the end persisting, safe arrive.  
 This my long sufferance and my day of grace 200

They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste ;  
 But hard be hard'nd, blind be blinded more,  
 That they may stumble on, and deeper fall ;  
 And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
 But yet all is not don ; Man disobeying,  
 Disloyal breaks his fealtie, and sinns  
 Against the high Supremacie of Heav'n,  
 Affecting God-head, and so looking all,  
 To expiate his Treason hath naught left,  
 But to destruction sacred and devote,

He with his whole posteritie must die,  
 210 Die hee or Justice must ; unless for him  
 Som other able, and as willing, pay  
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
 Say Heav'ly Powers, where shall we find such love,  
 Which of ye will be mortal to redeem  
 Mars mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save,  
 Dwels in all Heaven charitie so deare ?

He ask'd, but all the Heav'ly Quire stood mute,  
 And silence was in Heav'n : on mans behalf  
 Patron or Intercessor none appeerd,  
 220 Much less that durst upon his own head draw  
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
 And now without redemption all mankind  
 Must have bin lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell  
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
 In whom the fulness dwels of love divine,  
 His dearest mediation thus renewd.

Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace ;  
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
 230 To visit all thy creatures, and to all  
 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought,  
 Happie for man, so coming ; he her aide  
 Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost ;  
 Attonement for himself or offering meet,  
 Indebted and undon, hath none to bring :  
 Behold mee then, mee for him, life for life  
 I offer, on mee let thine anger fall ;  
 Account mee man ; I for his sake will leave  
 Thy bosom, and this glorie next to thee  
 240 Freely putt off, and for him lastly die

Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage ;  
Under his gloomie power I shall not long  
Lie vanquisht ; thou hast givn me to possess  
Life in my self for ever, by thee I live,  
Though now to Death I yeild, and am his due  
All that of me can die, yet that debt paid ,  
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsom grave  
His prey , nor suffer my unspotted Soule  
For ever with corruption there to dwell ;  
But I shall rise Victorious, and subdue  
My Vanquisher, spoild of his wanted spoile ;  
Death his deaths wound thall then receive, & stoop  
Inglorious, of his mortall sting disarm'd.  
I through the ample Air in Triumph high  
Shall lead Hell Captive maugre Hell, and show  
The powers of darkness bound. Thou at the sight  
Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,  
While by thee rais'd I ruin all my Foes,  
Death last, and with his Carcass glut the Grave:  
Then with the multitude of my redeemd  
Shall enter Heaven long absent, and returne,  
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd,  
And reconcilement ; wrauth shall be no more  
Thenceforth, but in thy presence Joy entire.

His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
To mortal men, above which only shon  
Fl'ial obedience : as a sacrifice  
Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will  
Of his great Father. Admiration scis'd  
All Heav'n, what this might mean, & wl i ther tend  
won-

250

260

270

Wondring ; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd :  
 O thou in Heav'n and Earth the only peace  
 Found out for mankind under wrauth, O thou  
 My sole complacence ! well thou know'st how dear,  
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least  
 Though last created, that for him I spare  
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
 By loosing thee a while, the whole Race lost.  
 280 Thou therefore whom thou only canst redeeme,  
 Thir Nature also to thy Nature joyne ;  
 And be thy self Man among men on Earth,  
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of Virgin seed,  
 By wondrous birth : Be thou in *Adams* room  
 The Head of all mankind, though *Adams* Son.  
 As in him perish all men, so in thee  
 As from a second root shall be restor'd,  
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.  
 290 His crime makes guiltie all his Sons, thy merit  
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce  
 Thir own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
 Shall satisfie for Man, be judg'd and die,  
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise  
 His Brethren, ransomd with his own dear life.  
 So Heav'nly love shal outdoo Hellish hate,  
 Giving to death, and dying to redeeme,  
 300 So dearly to redeem what Hellish hate  
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroyes  
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
 Nor shalt thou by descending to assume  
 Mans Nature, less'n or degrade thine owne.

Because

Because thou hast, though Thron'd in highest bliss  
Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
God-like fruition, quitted all to save  
A World from utter loss, and hast been found  
By Merit more then Birthright Son of God,  
Found worthiest to be so by being Good,  
Farr more then Great or High; because in thee  
Love hath abounded more then Glory abounds,  
Therefore thy Humiliation shall exalt  
With thee thy Manhood also to this Throne;  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt Reigne  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
Anointed universal King; all Power  
I give thee, reign for ever, and assume  
Thy Merits; under thee as Head Supream  
Thrones, Prinedoms, Powers, Dominions I reduce:  
All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide  
In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell;  
When thou attended gloriously from Heav'n  
Shalt in the Skie appeare, and from thee send  
The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim  
Thy dread Tribunal: forthwith from all Windes  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
Of all past Ages to the general Doom  
Shall hast'n, such a peal shall rouse thir sleep.  
Then all thy Saints assembl'd, thou shalt judge  
Bad men and Angels, they arraignd shall link  
Beneath thy Sentence; Hell, her numbers full,  
Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while  
The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
New Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall  
And after all thir tribulations long

310

320

330

(dwell  
See

## Book 3. *Paradise lost.*

See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.

340 Then thou thy regal Scepter shalt lay by,  
For regal Scepter then no more shall need,  
God shall be All in All. But all ye Gods,  
Adore him, who to compass all this dies,  
Adore the Son, and honour him as mee.

• No sooner had th' Almighty ceas't, but all  
The multitude of Angels with a shout  
Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heav'n rung  
With Jubilee, and loud Hosanna's fill'd  
Th' eternal Regions : lowly reverent

350 Towards either Throne they bow, & to the ground  
With solemn adoration down they cast  
Thir Crowns inwove with Amarant and Gold,  
Immortal Amarant, a Flour which once  
In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life

Began to bloom, but soon for mans offence  
To Heav'n remov'd where first it grew, there grows,  
And flours aloft shading the Fount of Life,  
And wherethe river of Bliss through midst of Heavn  
Rowls o're *Elisan* Flours her Amber stream;

360 With these that never fade, the Spirits Elect  
Bind thir resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams,  
Now in loose Garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
Pavement that like a Sea of Jasper shon  
Impurpl'd with Celestial Roses smil'd.

Then Crown'd again thir gold'n Harps they took,  
Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side  
Like Quivers hung, and with Praemable sweet  
Of charming symphonie they introduce

Their

Thir sacred Song, and waken raptures high;  
No voice exempt, no voice but well could joine  
Melodious part, such concord 's in Heav'n.

370

Thee Father first they sung Omnipotent,  
Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
Eternal King; thee Author of all being,  
Fountain of Light, thy self invisible  
Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st  
Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st  
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
Drawn round about thee like a radiant Shrine,  
Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,  
Yet dazzle Heav'n, that brightest Seraphim  
Approach not, but with both wings veil thir e yes.  
Thee next they sang of all Creation first,  
Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud  
Made visible, th' Almighty Father shines,  
Whom else no Creature can behold; on thee  
Imprest the effulgence of his Glorie abides,  
Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit refts.  
Hee Heav'n of Heavens and all the Powers therein  
By thee created, and by thee threw down  
Th' aspiring Dominations: thou that day  
Thy Fathers dreadful Thunder didst not spare,  
Nor stop thy flaming Chariot wheels, that shook  
Heav'n's everlasting Frame, while o're the necks  
Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarrayd.  
Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaine  
Thee only extold, Son of thy Fathers might,  
To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,  
Not so on Man; him through their malice fall'n,

380

390

400

Father of Mercie and Grace, thou didst not doome  
 So strictly, but much more to pitie encline :  
 No sooner did thy dear and onely Son  
 Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail Man  
 So strictly, but much more to pitie enclin'd,  
 He to appease thy wrauth, and end the strife  
 Of Mercy and Justice in thy face discern'd,  
 Regardless of the Bliss wherein hee sat  
 Second to thee, offerd himself to die  
 410 For mans offence. O unexampl'd love,  
 Love no where to be found less then Divine !  
 415 Hail Son of God, Saviour of Men, thy Name  
 Shall be the copious matter of my Song  
 Henceforth, and never shall my Harp thy praise  
 Forget, nor from thy Fathers praise disjoine.

Thus they in Heav'n, above the starry Sphear,  
 This happie hours in joy and hymning spent.  
 Mean while upon the firm opaqueous Globe  
 Of this round World, whose first ~~conver~~ divides  
 420 The luminous inferior Orbs, enclos'd  
 From *Chaos* and th' inroad of Darkness old,  
 Satan alighted walks : a Globe farre off  
 It seem'd, now seems a boundles Continent  
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night  
 Starles expos'd, and ever-threatning storms  
 Of *Chaos* blustering round, inclement skie ;  
 Save on that side which from the wallof Heav'n  
 Though distant farr som small reflection gaines  
 Of glimmering air less vext with tempest loud :  
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.  
 As when a Vultur on *Imass* bred,  
 430 Wheeles lowrie ridge the roving *Tartar* bounds,

Dis-

Dislodging from a Region scarce of prey  
 To gorge the flesh of Lambs or yearling Kids  
 On Hills where Flocks are fed, flies toward the  
 Of *Ganges* or *Hydapses*, *Indian* streams ; (Springs  
 But in his way lights on the barren plaines  
 Of *Sericana*, where *Chineſes* drive  
 With Sails and Wind thir canie Waggon light :  
 So on this windie Sea of Land, the Fiend  
 Walk'd up and down alone bent on his prey,  
 Alone, for other Creature in this place  
 Living or liveleſſ to be found was none,  
 None yet, but ſore hereafter from the earth  
 Up hither like Aeternal vapours flew  
 Of all things transitorie and vain, when Sin  
 With vanity had fill'd the works of men :  
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
 Built thir fond hopes of Glorie or lasting fame,  
 Or happiness in this or th' other life ;  
 All who have <sup>had</sup> thir reward on Earth, the fruits  
 Of painful Superſtitio[n] and blind Zeal,  
 Naught ſeeking but the praise of men, here find  
 Fit retribuſion, emptie as thir deeds ;  
 All th' unaccompliſt works of Natures hand,  
 Abortive, monſtrous, or unkindly mixt,  
 Diſſolv'd on earth, ſleet hither, and in vain,  
 Till final diſſolution, wander here, (dreamd ;  
 Not in the neighbouring Moon, as ſome have  
 Those argent Fields more likely habitants,  
 Translated ſaints, on middle ſpirits hold  
 Betwixt th' Angelical and Human kinde :  
 Hither of ill-joyn'd Sons and Daughters born  
 First from the ancient World thofe Giants came

440

450

460

With many a vain exploit, though then renouwnd :  
The builders next of *Babel* on the Plain  
Of *Sennaar*, and still with vain designe  
New *Babels*, had they wherewithall, would build:  
Others came single ; hee who to be deemd  
470 A God, leap'd fondly into *Aetna* flames,  
*Empedocles*, and hee who to enjoy  
*Plato's Elysium*, leap'd into the Sea,  
*Cleombrotus*, and many more too long,  
Embryo's and Idiots, Eremits and Friers  
White, Black and Grey, with all thir trumperie.  
Here Pilgrims roam, that stray'd so farr to seek  
In *Golgotha* him dead, who lives in Heav'n ;  
And they who to be sure of Paradise  
Dying put on the weeds of *Dominic*,  
480 Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguis'd ;  
They pass the Planets seven, and pass the fixt,  
And that Crystalline Sphear whose ballance weighs  
The Trepidation talkt, and that first mov'd ;  
And now Saint *Peter* at Heav'n's Wicket seems  
To wait them with his Keys, and now at foot  
Of Heav'n's ascent they lift thir Feet, when loe  
A violent cross wind from either Coast  
Blows them transverse ten thousand Leagues awry  
Into the devious Air ; then might yee see  
490 Cowles, Hoods and Habits with thin wearers tost  
And flutterd into Ragg's, then Reliques, Beads,  
Indulgences, Dispenses, Pardons, Bulls,  
The sport of Winds : all these upwhield aloft  
Fly o're the backside of the World fair off  
Into a *Limbo* large and broad, since callid  
The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown

Long

Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrod,  
All this dark Globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,  
And long he wander'd, till at last a gleame  
Of dawning light turnd thither-ward in haste  
His travell'd steps; farr distant hee descries  
Ascending by degrees magnificent  
Up to the wall of Heaven a Structure high,  
At top whereof, but farr more rich appeerd  
The work as of a Kingly Palace Gate  
With Frontispice of Diamond and Gold  
Imbellisht, thick with sparkling orient Gemmes  
The Portal shon, inimitable on Earth  
By Model, or by shading Pencil drawn.  
The Stairs were such as whereon *Jacob* <sup>law</sup>  
Angels ascending and descending, bands  
Of Guardians bright, when he from *Esau* fled  
To *Padan-Aram* in the field of *Luz*,  
Dreaming by night under the open Skie,  
And waking cri'd, This is the Gate of Heav'n;  
Each Stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There alwaies, but drawn up to Heav'n sometimes  
Viewless, and underneath a bright Sea flow'd  
Of Jasper, or of liquid Pearle, whereon  
Who after came from Earth, layling arriv'd,  
Wafted by Angels, or flew o're the Lake  
Rapt in a Chariot drawn by fiery Steeds  
The Stairs were then let down, whether so dare  
The Fiend by easie ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the dores of Bliss,  
Direct against which op'd from beneath  
Just o're the blissful seat of Paradise,  
A passage down to th' Earth, a passage wide,

Wider

Wider by farr then that of after-times  
50 Over Mount *Sion*, and, though that were large,  
Over the *Promis'd Land* to God so dear,  
By which, to visit oft those happy Tribes,  
On high behests his Angels to and fro  
Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard  
From *Paneas* the fount of *Jordans* flood  
To *Beersaba*, where the *Holy Land*  
Borders on *Ægypt* and the *Arabian* shoare;  
So wide the op'ning seemd, where bounds were set  
To darknes, such as bound the Ocean wave.  
540 *Satan* from hence now on the lower stair  
That scal'd by steps of Gold to Heav'n Gate  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
Of all this World at once. As when a Scout  
Through dark and desart wayes with peril gone  
All night; at last by break of chearful dawne  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing Hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some forein land  
550 First seen, or some renouwd Metropolis  
With glistering Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd,  
Which now the Rising Sun guilds with his beams.  
Such wonder seis'd, though after Heaven seen,  
The Spirit maligne, but much more envy seis'd  
At sight of all this World beheld so faire.  
Round he surveys, and well might, where he stood  
So high above the circling Canopie  
Of Nights extended shade; from Eastern Point  
Of *Libra* to the fleecie Starr that bears  
Andromeda farr off *Atlantick* Seas  
560 Beyond th' *Horizon*; then from Pole to Pole

He views in breadth, and without longer pause  
 Down right into the Worlds first Region throws  
 His flight precipitant, and windes with ease  
 Through the pure marble Air his oblique way  
 Amongst innumerable Starrs, that shon  
 Stars distant, but nigh hand seemd other Worlds,  
 Or other Worlds they seemd, or happy Iles,  
 Like those *Hesperian* Gardens fam'd of old,  
 Fortunate Fields, and Groves and flourie Vales,  
 Thrice happy Iles, but who dwelt happy there  
 He stayd not to enquire : above them all 570  
 The golden Sun in splendor likest Heaven  
 Allur'd his eye : Thither his course he bends  
 Through the calm Firmament ; but up or downe  
 By center, or eccentric , hard to tell,  
 Or Longitude, where the great Luminarie  
 Alooff the vulgar Constellations thick,  
 That from his Lordly eye keep distance due,  
 Dispenses Light from farr ; they as they move  
 Thir Sarry dance in numbers that compute (Lamp 580  
 Days, months, and years, towards his all-clearing  
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turnd  
 By his Magnetic beam, that gently warms  
 The Univers, and to each inward part  
 With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
 Shoots invisible vertue even to the deep :  
 So wondrously was set his Station bright.  
 There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
 Astronomer in the Sun's lucent Orbe  
 Through his glaz'd Optic Tube yet never saw. 590  
 The place he found beyond expression bright,  
 Compar'd with aught on Earth, Medal or Stone;

Not

Not all parts like, but all alike informd  
Which radiant light, as glowing Iron with fire ;  
If mettal, part seemd Gold, part Silver cleer ;  
If stone, Carbuncle most or Chrysolite,  
Rubie or Topaz, to the Twelve that shon  
In *Aarons* Brest-plate, and a stone besides  
Imagind rather oft then elsewhere seen,  
610 That stone, or like to that which here below  
Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
In vain, though by thir powerful Art they binde  
Volatile *Hermes*, and call up unbound  
In various shapes old *Proteus* from the Sea,  
Draind through a Limbec to his Native forme.  
What wonder then if fields and regions here  
Breathe forth *Elixir* pure, and Rivers run  
Potable Gold, when with one vertuous touch  
Th' Arch-chimic Sun so farr from us remote  
620 Produces with Terrestrial Humor mixt  
Here in the dark so many precious things  
Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?  
Here matter new to gaze the Devil met  
Undazl'd, farr and wide his eye commands,  
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
But all Sun-shine, as when his Beams at Noon  
Culminate from th' *Æquator*, as they now  
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
Shadow from body opaque can fall, and the Aire,  
630 Nowhere so clear, sharp'd his visual ray  
To objects distant farr, whereby he soon  
Saw within kenn a glorious Angel stand,  
The same whom *John* saw also in the Sun :  
His back was turnd, but not his brightness hid ;

Of

Of beaming sunnie Raies, a golden tiar  
 Circl'd his Head, nor less his Locks behind  
 Illustrious on his Shoulders fledge with wings  
 Lay waving round; on som great charge employ'd  
 Hee seemd, or fixt in cogitation deep.

Glad was the Spirit impure as now in hope  
 To find who might direct his wandring flight  
 To Paradise the happie seat of Man,  
 His journeys end and our beginning woe.

But first he casts to change his proper shape,  
 Which else might work him danger or delay :  
 And now a stripling Cherube he appeers,  
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
 Youth smil'd Celestial, and to every Limb  
 Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feignd ;  
 Under a Coronet his flowing haire

In curles on either cheek plaid, wings he wore  
 Of many a colourd plume sprinkl'd with Gold,  
 His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
 Before his decent steps a Silver wand.

He drew not nigh unheard, the Angel bright,  
 Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turnd,  
 Admonisht by his eare, and strait was known  
 Th' Arch-Angel *Vriel*, one of the seav'n

Who in Gods presence, neerest to his Throne  
 Stand ready at command, and are his Eyes

That run through all the Heav'ns, or down to th'  
 Bear his swift errands over moist and dry, (Earth  
 O're Sea and Land : him *satan* thus accostes ;

*Vriel*, for thou of those seav'n Spirits that stand  
 In sight of God's high Throne, gloriously bright,  
 The first art wont his great authentic will

640

650

660

Interpreter through highest Heav'n to bring,  
Where all his Sons thy Embassie attend ;  
And here art likeliest by supream decree  
670 Like honour to obtain, and as his Eye  
To visit oft this new Creation round ;  
Unspeakable desire to see, and know

All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these his works so wondrous he ordaind,  
Hath brought me from the Quires of Gheribim  
Alone thus wandring. Brightest Seraph tell  
In which of all these shining Orbes hath Man  
His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,  
680 But all these shining Orbes his choice to dwell ;  
That I may find him, and with secret gaze,  
Or open admiration him behold  
On whom the great Creator hath bestowd  
Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces powrd ;  
That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
The Universal Maker we may praise ;  
Who justly hath drivn out his Rebell Foes  
To deepest Hell, and to repair that loss  
Created this new happie Race of Men  
690 To serve him better : wise are all his wayes.

So spake the false dissembler unperceivd ;  
For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisie, the only evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By his permissive will, through Heav'n and Earth :  
And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
At wisdoms Gate, and to simplicitie  
Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
Where

Where no ill seems : Which now for once beguil'd  
Uriel, though Regent of the Sun, and held  
The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heav'n ;  
Who to the fraudulent Impostor foule  
In his uprightness answer thus returnd.

700

Faire Angel, thy desire which tends to know  
The works of God, thereby to glorie  
The great Work-Maister, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
From thy Empyreal Mansion thus alone,  
To witnes with thine eyes what some perhaps  
Contented with report heare onely in heav'n:  
For wonderful indeed are all his works,  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance awayes with delight ;  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Thir number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid thir causes deep.

710

I saw when at his Word the formless Mass,  
This worlds material mould, came to a heap :  
Confusion heard his voice, and wilde uproar  
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd ;  
Till at his second bidding darkness fled,  
Light shon, and order from disorder sprung :  
Swift to thir several Quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous Elements, Earth, Flood, Aire, Fire,  
And this Ethereal quintessence of Heav'n  
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That rowld orbicular, and turnd to Starrs  
Numberless, as thou seeft, and how they move ;  
Each had his place appointed, each his course,

720

730

740 The rest in circuit walles this Universe.  
Look downward on that Globe whose hither side  
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines;  
That place is Earth the seat of Man, that light  
His day, which else as th' other Hemisphere  
Night would invade, but there the neighbouring  
(So call that opposite fair Starr) her aide (Moon  
Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heav'n ;  
With borrowd light her countenance trifrom  
Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' Earth,  
And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
That spot to which I point is *Paradise*,  
*Adams* abode, those loftie thades his Bowre.  
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.  
Thus said, he turnd, and *satan* bowing low,  
As to superior Spirits is wont in Heaven,  
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,  
Down from th' Ecliptic, sped with hop'd succels,  
760 Throws his steep flight with many an Aerie wheel,  
Nor staid, till on *Niphates* top he lights.

*The End of the Third Book.*

*X. See some copies of this edition  
in in is substituted for with.*

PARA-



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK IV.

 For that warning voice, which he who saw  
Th' *Apocalyps*, heard cry in Heaven aloud,  
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be reveng'd on men,  
*Wo to the inhabitants on Earth!* that now,  
While time was, our first Parents had bin warnd  
The coming of thir secret foe, and scap'd  
Haply so scap'd his mortal snare; for now  
*satan*, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,  
The Tempter ere th' Accuser of man-kind,  
To wreck on innocent frail man his loss  
Of that first Battel, and his flight to Hell:  
Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth  
Now rowling, boiles in his tumultuous brest,  
And like a devillish Engine back recoiles

10

Upon

Upon himself; horror and doubt distract  
His troubl'd thoughts, and from the bottom stirr  
20 The Hell within him, for within him Hell  
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
One step no more then from himself can fly  
By change of place: Now conscience wakes despair  
That slumberd, wakes the bitter memorie  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
Worse; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes towards *Eden* which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his grievd look he fixes sad, (Sun,  
Sometimes towards Heav'n and the full-blazing  
30 Which now sat high in his Meridian Towre:  
Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.  
O thou that with surpassing Glory crownd,  
Look'st from thy sole Dominion like the God  
Of this new World; at whose sight all the Starrs  
Hide thir diminisht heads; to thee I call,  
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name  
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams  
That bring to my remembrance from what state  
I fell, how glorious once above thy Spheare;  
40 Till Pride and worse Ambition threw me down  
Warring in Heav'n against Heav'n's matchless King:  
Ah wherefore! he deservd no such return  
From me, whom he created what I was  
In that bright eminence, and with his good  
Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.  
What could be les then to afford him praise,  
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,  
How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,  
And wrought but malice; listed up so high

I findeind subjection, and thought one step higher  
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit

50

The debt immense of endless gratitude,

So burthenosome, still paying, still to owe ;

Forgetful what from him I still receivd,

And understood not that a grateful mind

By owing owes not, but still pays, at once

Indebted and dischargd ; what burden then ?

O had his powerful Destiny ordain'd

Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood

Then happie ; no unbounded hope had rais'd

60

Ambition. Yet why not ? sum other Power

As great might have aspir'd, and me though mean

Drawn to his part ; but other Powers as great

Fell not, but stand unshak'n, from within

Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.

Hadst thou the same free Will and Power to stand ?

Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what to ac-

But Heav'n's free Love dealt equally to all ? (cuse,

Be then his Love accurst, since love or hate,

To me alike, it deals eternal woe.

70

Nay curs'd be thou ; since against his thy will

Chose freely what it now so justly rues.

Me miserable ! which way shall I flie

Infinite wrauth, and infinite despaire ?

Which way I flie is Hell ; my self am Hell ;

And in the lowest deep a lower deep

Still threatening to devour me opens wide,

To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heav'n.

O then at last relent : is there no place

80

Left for Repentance, none for Pardon left ?

None left but by submission ; and that word

*Disdain* forbids me, and my dread of shame  
Among the spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
With other promises and other vaunts  
Then to subunit, boasting I could subdue  
Th' Omnipotent. Ay me, they little know  
How dearly I abide that boast so vaine,  
Under what torments inwardly I groane ;  
While they adore me on the Throne of Hell,  
80 With Diadem and Scepter high advanc'd  
The lower still I fall, onely Supream  
In miserie ; such joy Ambition findes.  
But say I could repent and could obtaine  
By Act of Grace my former state ; how soon  
Would highth recal high thoughts, how soon unsay  
What feign'd submission swore: ease would recant  
Vows made in pain, as violent and void.  
For never can true reconcilement grow (deep :  
Where wounds of deadly hate have peirc'd so  
90 Which would but lead me to a worse relapse  
And heavier fall : so should I purchase deare  
Short intermission bought with double smart.  
This knows my punisher ; therefore as farr  
From granting hee, as I from begging peace :  
All hope excluded thus, behold in stead  
Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,  
Mankind created, and for him this World.  
So farwel Hope, and with Hope farwel Fear,  
Farwel Remorse : all Good to me is lost ;  
100 Evil be thou my Good ; by thee at least  
Divide~~d~~ Empire with Heav'ns King I hold  
By thee, and more then half perhaps will reigne ;  
As Man ere long, and this new World shall know.

Thus

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face  
 Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envie and despair,  
 Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betraid  
 His counterfeat, if any eye beheld.

For heav'ly mindes from such distempers foule  
 Are ever clear. Whereof hee soon aware,  
 Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calme,  
 Artificer of fraud ; and was the first

120  
 That practis'd falsehood under fainely shew,  
 Deep malice to conceale, couch't with revenge :  
 Yet not anough had practis'd to deceive

*Uriel* once warnd ; whose eye pursu'd him down  
 The way he went, and on th' *Affyrian* mount  
 Saw him disfigur'd, more then could befall  
 Spirit of happie sort : his gestures fierce  
 He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,  
 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen.

130  
 So on he fares, and to the border comes  
 Of *Eden*, where delicious Paradise,  
 Now nearer, Crowns with her enclosure green,  
 As with a rural mound the champain head  
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairie sides  
 With thicket overgrown, grottesque and wilde,  
 Acces deni'd ; and over head up grew  
 Insuperable hight of loftiest shade,  
 Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm,  
 A Silvan Scene, and as the ranks ascend  
 Shade above shade, a woodie Theatre  
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher then thir tops  
 The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung :  
 Which to our general Site gave prospect large  
 Into his neather Empire neighbouring round.

And higher then that Wall a circling row  
Of goodliest Trees loaden with fairest Fruit,  
Blossoms and Fruits at once of golden hue  
Appeerd, with gay enameld colours mixt :  
150 On which the Sun more glad impres'd his beams  
Then in fair Evening Cloud, or humid Bow,  
When God hath showrd the earth; so lovely seemd  
That Lantskip : And of pure now purer aire  
Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
All sadness but despair : now gentle gales  
Fanning thir odoriferous wings dispense  
Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
Those balmie spoiles. As when to them who saile  
160 Beyond the *Cape of Hope*, and now are past  
*Mozambic*, off at Sea North-East windes blow  
*Sabean* Odours from the spacie shoare  
Of *Arabie* the blest, with such delay (League  
Well pleas'd they flack thir course, and many a  
Cheard with the grateful sinell old Ocean siniles.  
So entertainid those odorous sweets the Fiend  
Who came thir bane, though with them better  
Then *Asmodæus* with the sinne fume, (pleas'd  
That drove him, though enmouurd, from the Spouse  
Of *Tobit*, Son, and with a vengeance sent  
From *Media* post to *Egypt*, there last bound,  
Now to th ascent of that steep savage Hill  
*Satan* had journied on, penlive and slow,  
But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,  
As one containu'd brake, the undergrowth  
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplext  
All path of Man or Beast that past that way ?

One Gate there onely was, and that look'd East  
 On th' other side : which when th' arch-felon saw  
 Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt,  
 At one flight bound high overleap'd all bound  
 Of Hill or highest Wall, and sheer within  
 Lights on his feet. As when a prowling Wolfe,  
 Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
 Watching where Shepherds pen thir Flocks at eve  
 In hurdl'd Gates amid the field secure,  
 Leaps o're the fence with ease into the Fould :  
 Or as a Thief bent to unhoord the cash  
 Of some rich Burgher, whose substantial dôres,  
 Crost-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault,  
 Is at the window climbs, or o're the tiles ;  
 So climb this first-grand Thief into Gods Fould :  
 So since into his Church lewd Hiselings clime  
 Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,  
 The middle Tree and highest there that grew,  
 Sat like a Cormorant ; yet not true Life  
 Thereby regain'd, but sat devising Death  
 To them who liv'd not on the vertue thought  
 Of that life-giving Plant, but only us'd  
 For prosp'rit, what well us'd had bin the pledge  
 Of immortalitie. So little knows  
 Any, but God alone, to value right  
 The good before him, but perverts best things  
 To worst abusing, or to shir meanest us.  
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views  
 To all delight of human sense empow'd  
 In narrow Natures, whole wealth, yea more,  
 A Heaven on Earth, for blissful Paradise  
 Of God the Garden was, by him in the East

210 Of *Eden* planted; *Eden* stretchd her Line  
From *Auran* Eastward to the Royal Towns  
Of great *Selencia*, built by *Grecian* Kings,  
Or where the Sons of *Eden* long before  
Dwelt in *Telaffar*: in this pleasant soile  
His farre more pleasant Garden God ordaind;  
Out of the fertil ground he caus'd to grow  
All Trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;  
And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,  
High eminent, blooming Ambrosial Fruitt

220 Of vegetable Gold; and next to Life  
Our Death the Tree of Knowledge grew fast by,  
Knowledge of Good bought dear by knowing ill.  
Southward through *Eden* went a River large, (hill  
Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggie  
Pass'd underneath ingulft, for God had thrown  
That Mountain at his Garden mould high rais'd  
Upon the rapid current, which through veins  
Of porous Earth with kindly thirst up drawn,  
Role a fresh Fountain, and with many a rill

230 Waterd the Garden; thence united fell  
Down the steep glade, and met the neather Flood,  
Which from his darksom passage now appears,  
And now divided into four main Streams,  
Runs divers, wandring many a famous Realme  
And Country whereof here needs no account,  
But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,  
How from that Saphire Fount the crisped Brooks,  
Rowling on Orient Pearl and sands of Gold,  
With mazje error under pendant shades

240 Ran Nectar, visiting each plant, and fed  
Flours worthy of Paradise which not nice Art

In Beds and curious Knots, but Nature soon  
 Powrd forth profuse on Hill and Dale and Plaine,  
 Both where the morning Sun first warmly smote  
 The open field, and where the unpiert shade  
 Inbround the noontide Bows: Thus was thisplace,  
 A happy rural seat of various view; (Balme,  
 Groves whose rich Trees wept odorous Gumms and  
 Others whose fruit burnish'd with Golden Rinde  
 Hung amiable, *Hesperian* Fables true,  
 If true, here only, and of delicious taste:  
 Betwixt them Lawns, or level Downs, and Flocky  
 Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,  
 Or palmie hilloc, or the flourie lap  
 Of som irriguous Valley spread her store,  
 Flours of all hue, and without Thorn the Rose:  
 Another side, unbrageous Grotts and Caves  
 Of coole recess, o're which the mantling Vine  
 Layes forth her purple Grape, and gently creeps  
 Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall  
 Down the slope hills, dispersit, or in a Lake,  
 That to the fringed Bank with Myrtle crownd,  
 Her chrystall mirror holds, unite thir streams.  
 The Birds this quire applys, aires, vernal aires,  
 Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune  
 The trembling leaves, while Universall Pm  
 Knit with the *Graces* and the *Houres* in dance  
 Led on th' ETERNAL Spring. Not that faire field  
 Of *Enna*, where *Proserpina* gathering flours  
 Her self a fairer Eloure by gloomy *Dis*  
 Was gatherd, which cost *Curas* all that pain  
 To seek her through the world; nor that sweet  
 Of *Daphne* by *Grastes*, and th' inspir'd (Grove  
 Capitan)

250

260

268

270

*Castalian* Spring might with this Paradise  
 Of *Eden* strive; nor that *Nysian* Isle  
 Girt with the River *Triton*, where old *Cham*,  
 Whom *Gentiles* *Ammon* call and *Libyan* Jove,  
 Hid *Amalthea* and her Florid Son  
 Young *Bacchus* from his Stepdame *Abea*'s eye;

280 Nor where *Abissin* Kings thir issue Guard,  
 Mount *Amara*, though this by som suppos'd  
 True Paradise under the *Eryop* Line  
 By *Nilus* head, enclos'd with shining Rock,  
 A whole dayes journey high, but wide remote  
 From this *Affynian* Garden, where the Fiend  
 Saw undelighted all delight; all kind  
 Of living Creatures new to sight and strange:  
 Two of far nobler shape erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect, with native Honour clad

290 In naked Majestic: seem'd Lords of all,  
 And worthie seem'd, for in thir looks Divine  
 The image of thir glorious Maker shone,  
 Truth, *Wisdome*, *Sanctitude* severe and pure,  
 Severe, but so true *Moral* freedom plac'd;  
 Whence true autoritie in men; though both  
 Not equal, as this sex not equal seem'd;  
 For contemplation hee and valour form'd,  
 For softnes shee and sweet attractive Grace;  
 Hee for God only, shee for God in him

300 His fair large Front and Eye sublimē declar'd  
 Absolute rule; and *Hyscynthian* Locks  
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clustering; but not beneath his Shoulders broad  
 Shee as a vall down to the Nodding waste  
 Her beauteous golden tresses wove

Dishe-

Disheveld, but in wanton ringless wav'd  
 As the Vine curles her tendrils, which impli'd  
 Subje<sup>c</sup>tion, but requir'd with gentle sway,  
 And by her yeilded, by him best receiv'd,  
 Yeilded with coy submission, modest pride,  
 And sweet reluctant amorous delay.

310

Nor those mysterious parts were then conceald,  
 Then was not guiltie shame, dishonest shame  
 Of natures works, honor dishonorable,  
 Sin-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind  
 With shews instead, meer shews of seeming pure,  
 And banisht from mans life his happiest life,  
 Simplicite and spotless innocence.

So pass'd they naked on, nor shund the sight  
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill:  
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the lovliesst pair  
 That ever since in loves imbraces met,  
 Adam the goodliest man of men since borne  
 His Sons, the fairest of her Daughtets Eve.

320

Under a tuft of shade that on a green  
 Stood whispering soft, by a fresh Fountain side  
 They sat them down, and after no more toil  
 Of thir sweet Gardning labour then suffic'd  
 To recommend coole Zephyr, and made ease  
 More easie, w<sup>th</sup> hol som thirt and appetite  
 More grateful, to thir Supper Fruits they fell,  
 Nectarine Fruits which the compliant bbughes  
 Yeilded them, side long as they sat recline  
 On the soft downie Bank damaskt with flours:  
 The fauourie pulp they chew, and in the tinde  
 Still as they thirtied scoop the brimming streamys  
 Nor gentle purpos, nor endearing smiles

330

Wanted,

Wanted, nor youthful dalliance as beseems  
Fair couple, linkt in happy nuptial League,  
340 Alone as they. About them frisking playd  
All Beasts of th' Earth, since wilde, and of all chase  
In Wood or Wilderness, Forrest or Den ;  
Sporting the Lion rampd, and in his paw  
Dandl'd the Kid ; Bears, Tygers, Ounces, Pards  
Gambold before them, th' unwieldy Elephant  
To make them mirth us'd all his might, & wreathid  
His Lithe Proboscis ; close the Serpent fly  
Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
His breaded train, and of his fatal guile  
350 Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass  
Coucht, and now fild with pasture gazing sat,  
Or bedward ruminating : for the Sun  
Declin'd was hasting now with prone carreer  
To th' Ocean Iles, and in th' ascending Scale  
Of Heav'n the Starrs that usher Evening rose :  
When *Satan* still ingaze, as first he stood,  
Scarce thus at length faild speech recoverd sad.  
O Hell ! what doe mine eyes with grief behold,  
Into our room of bliss thus high advanc't  
360 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,  
Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright  
Little inferior ; whom my thoughts pursue  
With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
In them Divine resemblance, and such grace  
The hand that forind them on thir shape hath  
A gentle pair, yee little think how nigh  
Your change approaches, when all these delights  
Will vanish and deliver ye to woe,  
More woe, the more your taste is now of joys  
Happy,

Happie, but for so happie ill secur'd  
Long to continue, and this high seat your Heav'n  
Ill fenc't for Heav'n to keep out such a foe  
As now is enter'd ; yet no purpos'd foe  
To you whom I could pittie thus forlorne  
Though I unpittied : League with you I seek,  
And mutual amitie so streight, so close,  
That I with you must dwell, or you with me  
Henceforth ; my dwelling haply may not please  
Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such  
Accept your Makers work ; he gave it me,  
Which I as freely give ; Hell shall unfould,  
To entertain you two, her widest Gates,  
And send forth all her Kings ; there will be room,  
Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
Your numerous offspring ; if no better place,  
Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge  
On you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd.  
And should I at your harmless innocence  
Melt, as I doe, yet public reason just,  
Honour and Empire with revenge enlarg'd,  
By conquering this new World, compels me now  
To do what else though damad I should abhorre.

370

380

390

So spake the Fiend, and with necessitie,  
The Tyrants plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.  
Then from his loftie stand on that high Tree  
Down he alights among the sportful Herd  
Of those fourfooted kindes, himself now one,  
Now other, as thir shape servd best his end  
Neerer to view his prey, and unespi'd  
To mark what of thir state he more might learn  
By word or action markt ; about them round

400

A Lion now he stalkes with fierie glare,  
Then as a Tiger, who by chance hath spil'd  
In some Purlieu two gentle Fawnes at play,  
Strait couches close, then rising changes oft  
His couchant watch, as one who choise his ground  
Whence rushing he might surest seise them both  
Grip't in each paw: when *Adam* first of men  
To first of women *Eve* thus moving speech,  
410 Turn'd him all eare to heare new utterance flow,  
Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,  
Dearer thy self then all; needs must the Power  
That made us, and for us this ample World  
Be infinitly good, and of his good  
As liberal and free as infinite,  
That rais'd us from the dust and plac't us here  
In all this happiness, who at his hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can performe  
Aught whereof hee hath need, hee who requires  
420 From us no other service then to keep  
This one, this easie charge, of all the Trees  
In Paradise that beare delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that onely Tree  
Of knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life,  
So neer grows Death to Life, what ere Death is,  
Som dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou knowst  
God hath pronoune't it death to taste that Tree,  
The only signe of our obedience left  
Among so many signes of power and rule  
430 Conferrd upon us, and Dominion giv'n  
Over all other Creatures that possesse  
Earth, Aire, and Sea. Then let us not think hard  
One easie prohibition, who enjoy

Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
 Unlimited of manifold delights :  
 But let us ever praise him, and extoll  
 His bountie, following our delightful task  
 To prune these growing Plants, & tend these Flours,  
 Which were it toilsom, yet with thee were sweet.

To whom thus *Eve* repli'd. O thou for whom  
 And from whom I was form'd flesh of thy flesh,  
 And without whom am to no end, my Guide  
 And Head, what thou hast said is just and right.  
 For wee to him indeed all praises owe,  
 And daily thanks, I chiefly who enjoy  
 So farr the happier Lot, enjoying thee  
 Preeminent by so much odds, while thou  
 Like confort to thy self canst nowhere find.  
 That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
 I first awak't, and found my self repos'd  
 Under a shade on flours, much wondring where  
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
 Not distant far from thence a murmuring found  
 Of waters issu'd from a Cave and spread  
 Into a liquid Plain, then stood unmov'd  
 Pure as th' expanse of Heav'n; I thither went  
 With unexperienc't thought, and laid me downe  
 On the green bank, to look into the cleer  
 Smooth Lake, that to me seemd another Skie.  
 As I bent down to look, just opposite,  
 A Shape within the watry gleam appeerd  
 Bending to look on me, I started back,  
 It started back, but pleas'd I soon return'd,  
 Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answering looks  
 Of sympathie and love, there I had fixt

440

450

460

Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
Had not a voice thus warnd me, What thou seest,  
What there thou seest fair Creature is thy self,  
With thee it caine and goes : but follow me,  
470 And I will bring thee where no shadow staies  
Thy coming, and thy soft imbraces, hee  
Whose image thou art, him thou shall enjoy  
Inseparablie thine, to him shalt beare  
Multitudes like thy self, and thence be call'd  
Mother of human Race : what could I doe,  
But follow strait, invisibly thus led ?  
Till I espi'd thee, fair indeed and tall,  
Under a Platan, yet methought less faire,  
Less winning soft, less amiablie milde,  
480 Then that smooth watry images back I turnd,  
Thou following cryd'st aloud, Return fair Eve,  
Whom flist thou? whom thou flist, of him thou art,  
His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent  
Out of my side to thee, neerest my heart  
Substantial Life, to have thee by my side  
Henceforth an individual solace dear ;  
Part of my Soul I seek thee, and thee claim  
My other half : with that thy gentle hand  
Seid mine, I yeilded, and from that time see  
490 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace  
And wisdom, which alone is truly fair.  
So spake our general Mother, and with eyes  
Of conjugal attraction unreprov'd,  
And meek surrend're, half imbracing leand  
On our first Father, half her swelling Breast  
Naked met his under the flowing Gold  
Of her loose tresses hid : he in delight

Both of her Beauty and submissive Charms

Smil'd with superior Love, as *Jupiter*

On *Juno* smiles, when he impregn's the Clouds  
That shed *May* Flowers; and press'd her Matron lip  
With kisses pure: aside the Devil turnd  
For envie, yet with jealous leer maligne  
Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plaind.

500

Sight hateful, sight tormenting! thus these two  
Imparadis't in one anothers arms

The happier *Eden*, shall enjoy thir fill  
Of bliss on bliss, while I to Hell am thrust,  
Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
Among our other torments not the least,  
Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines;

510

Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
From thir own mouths; all is not theirs it seems:

One fatal Tree there stands of Knowledge call'd,  
Forbidden them to taste: Knowledge forbidd'n?  
Suspicious, reasonless. Why should thir Lord

Envie them that? can it be sin to know,

Can it be death? and do they onely stand

By Ignorance, is that thir happie state,

The proof of thir obedience and thir faith?

O fair foundation laid whereon to build

This ruine! Henoë I will excite thir minds

With more desire to know, and to reject

Envious commands, invented with designe

To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt

Equal with Gods; aspiring to be such,

They taste and die; what likelier can ensue?

But first with narrow search I must walk round

This Garden, and no corner leave unspied;

520

530 A chance but chance may lead where I may meet  
Some wandring Spirit of Heav'n, by Fountain side,  
Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
What further would be learnt. Live while ye may,  
Yet happie pair ; enjoy, till I return,  
Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
But with fly circumspection, and began (roam.  
Through wood, through waste, o're hil, o're dale his  
Mean while in utmost Longitude, where Heav'n

540 With Earth and Ocean meets, the setting Sun  
Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
Against the eastern Gate of Paradise  
Leveld his eevning Rayes : it was a Rock  
Of Alabaster, pil'd up to the Clouds,  
Conspicuous farr, winding with one ascent  
Accessible from Earth, one entrance high ;  
The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
Still as it rose, impossible to climbe.  
Betwixt these rockie Pillars *Gabriel* sat

550 Chief of th' Angelic Guards, awaiting night ;  
About him exercis'd Heroic Games  
Th' unarmed Youth of Heav'n, but nigh at hand  
Celestial Armourie, Shields, Helmes, and Speares  
Hung high with Diamond flaming, and with Gold.  
Thither came *Uriel*, gliding through the Eeven  
On a Sun beam, swift as a shooting Starr  
In *Autumn* thwarts the night, when vapors fir'd  
Impress the Air, and shews the Mariner  
From what point of his Compas to beware.

560 Impetuous winds : he thus began in haste!  
*Gabriel*, to thee thy cours by Lot hath giv'n  
Charge

Charge and strict watch that to this happy place  
No evil thing approach or enter in;  
This day at highth of Noon came to my Spheare  
A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know  
More of th' Almighties works, and chiefly Man  
Gods latest Image : I describ'd his way  
Bent all on speed, and markt his Aerie Gate ;  
But in the Mount that lies from *Eden* North,  
Where he first lighted, soon discernd his looks  
Alien from Heav'n, with passions foul obscure'd :  
Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade  
Lost sight of him ; one of the banisht crew  
I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise  
New troubles ; him thy care must be to find.

570

To whom the winged Warriour thus return'd :  
*Uriel*, no wonder if thy perfet sight,  
Amid the Suns bright circle where thou sitst,  
See farr and wide : in at this Gate none pass  
The vigilance here plac't, but such as come  
Well known from Heav'n ; and since Meridian hour  
No Creature thence : if Spirit of other sort,  
So minded, have oreleapt these earthie bounds  
On purpose, hard thou knowst it to exclude  
Spiritual substance with corporeal barr.  
But if within the circuit of these walks  
In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
Thou telst, by morrow dawning I shall know.

580

So promis'd hee, and *Uriel* to his charge  
Returnd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd  
Bore him slope downward to the Sun now fall'n  
Beneath th' *Azores*, whither the prime Orb,  
Incredible how swift, had thither rowl'd

590

Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth  
By shorter flight to th' East, had left him there  
Arraying with reflected Purple and Gold  
The Clouds that on his Western Throne attend :  
Now came still Eevning on, and Twilight gray  
Had in her sober Liverie all things clad ;  
Silence accompanied, for Beast and Bird,  
They to thir grassie Couch, these to thir Nests  
Were flunk, all but the wakeful Nightingale ;  
She all night long her amorous descant sung ;  
Silence was pleas'd : now glow'd the Firmament  
With living Saphirs : *Hesperus* that led  
The starrie Host, rode brightest, till the Moon  
Rising in clouded Majestie, at length  
Apparent Queen unvaild her peerless light,  
And o're the dark her Silver Mantle threw.

610 When *Adam* thus to *Eve* : Fair Consort, th' hour  
Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest  
Mind us of like repose, since God hath set  
Labour and rest, as day and night to men  
Successiue, and the timely dew of sleep  
Now falling with soft flumbrous weight inclines  
Our eye-lids ; other Creatures all day long  
Rove idle unimploid, and less need rest ;  
Man hath his daily work of body or mind  
Appointed, which declares his Dignitie,  
620 And the regard of Heav'n on all his waies ;  
While other Animals unactive range,  
And of thir doings God takes no account.  
To morrow ere fresh Morning streak the East  
With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,  
And at our pleasant labour, to reform

Yon flourie Arbors, yonder Allies green,  
 Our walks at noon, with branches overgrown,  
 That mock our scant manuring, and require  
 More hands then ours to lop thir wanton growth :  
 Those Blossoms also, and those dropping Gumms,  
 That lie bestrowne unsightly and unsmooth,  
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease ;  
 Mean while, as Nature wills, Night bids us rest.

630

To whom thus *Eve* with perfet beauty adordnd.  
 My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst  
 Unargu'd I obey; so God ordains,  
 God is thy Law, thou mine : to know no more  
 Is womans happiest knowledge and her praise.  
 With thee conversing I forget all time,

640

All seasons and thir change, all please alike.  
 Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweer,  
 With charm of earliest Birds ; pleasant the Sun  
 When first on this delightful Land he spreads  
 His orient Beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flour,  
 Glistring with dew ; fragrant the fertile earth  
 After soft showers ; and sweet the coming on  
 Of grateful Eevning milde, then silent Night  
 With this her solemn Bird and this fair Moon,  
 And these the Geums of Heav'n, her starrie train :  
 But neither breath of Morn when she ascends  
 With charm of earliest Birds, nor rising Sun  
 On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, floure,  
 Glistring with dew, nor fragrance after showers,  
 Nor grateful Evening mild, nor silent Night  
 With this her solemn Bird, nor walk by Moon,  
 Or glittering Starf light without thee is sweet.  
 But wherfore all night long shine these, for whom

650

This glorious sight, when Sleep hath shut all eyes?  
To whom our general Ancestor repli'd.

660 Daughter of God and Man, accomplisht Eve,  
Those have thir course to finish, round the Earth,  
By morrow Eeyning, and from Land to Land  
In order, though to Nations yet unborm,  
Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise,  
Leaft total darknes should by Night regaine  
Her old possession, and extinguish life  
In Nature and all things, which these soft fires  
Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat,  
Of various influence foment and warre,  
Temper or nourish, or in part shed down  
Thir stellar vertue on all kinds that grow  
On Earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the Suns more potent Ray.  
These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,  
Shine not in vain, nor think, though men were none,  
That heav'n would want spectators, God want praise,  
Millions of spiritual Creatures walk the Earth  
Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep,  
All these with ceasles praise his works behold  
670 Both day and night: how often from the steep  
Of echoing Hill or Thicket have we heard  
Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
Sole, or responsive each to others note,  
Singing thir great Creator: oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk  
With Heav'ly touch of instrumental sounds  
In full harmonic number joind, thir songs  
Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

Thus talking hand in hand alone they pass'd  
680 On

On to this blissful Bower; it was a place  
 Chos'n by the sovran Planter, when he fram'd  
 All things to mans delightful use; the roofer  
 Of thickest covert was in wov'n shade  
 Laurel and Mrtle, and what higher grew,  
 Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either side  
*Acanthus*, and each odorous bushie shrub  
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flour,  
*Iris* althues, *Roses*, and *Gessamin* wrought  
 Rear'd high thir flourisht heads between; and  
 Mosaie, underfoot the Violet, on that boder  
 Crocus, and Hyacinth with rich inlay  
 Broider'd the ground, more colour'd then, with  
 Of costliest Emblem: other Creature here  
 Beast, Bird, Insect, or Worm durst enter none;  
 Such was this awe of mans In shadie Bower  
 More sacred and sequesterd, though but feign'd,  
*Pan* or *Silvanus* never slept, nor Nymph,  
 Nor *Faynus* haunted. Here in close recess  
 With Flowers, Garlands, and sweet-smelling Herbs  
 Espoused Eve deckt first her Nuptial Bed,  
 And heav'nly, Quires the Hymenæan Sung,  
 What day the genial Angel to our Sire  
 Brought her in naked beauty more ador'd,  
 More lovely then *Pandora*, whom the Gods  
 Endow'd with all thir gifts, and O too like  
 In sad event, when to the unwiser Son  
 Of Japhet brought by *Hermes*, the ensnar'd  
 Mankind with her faire looks, to beweyng'd  
 On him who had stolne Joyes authentic fire.

Thus at thir shadie Lodge arriv'd, birth stood,  
 Both turnd, and under op'n Skie ador'd.

The God that made both Skie, Air, Earth & Heav'n  
Which they beheld, the Moons resplendent Globe  
And starrie Pole : Thou also mad'st the Night,  
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the Day,  
Which we in our appointed work employ'd  
Have finisht happy in our mutual helpes and  
And mutual love, the Crown of all our bliss  
Ordain'd by thee, and this delicious place  
730 For us too large, where thy abundance wants  
Partakers, and uncrop't falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promis'd from us two a Race  
To fill the Earth, who shall with us extoll  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

This said unanimous, and other Rites  
Observing none, but adoration pure  
Which God likes best, into thir inmost bower  
Handed they went ; and eas'd the putting off  
740 These troublsom disguis which wee wear,  
Strait side by side were laid, nor surnd I weene  
Adam from his fair Spouse, nor Eve the Rites  
Mysterious of connubial Loye refus'd :  
Whatever Hypocrites austerey talk  
Of puritie and place and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to som, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids increase, who bids abstain  
But our Destroyer, foe to God and Man ?  
750 Haile wedded Love, mysterious Law, true source  
Of human offspring, sole proprietie,  
In Paradise of all things common else,  
By thee adulterous lust was driv'n from men.

Among

Among the bestial herds to saunge, by thee  
 Founded in Reason, Loyal, Just, and Pure,  
 Relations dear, and all the Charities  
 Of Father, Son, and Brother first were known.  
 Farre be it, that I should write thee sin or blamie,  
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,  
 Perpetual Fountain of Domestic sweets,  
 Whose Bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc't,  
 Present, or past, as Saints and Patriarchs us'd.  
 Here Loye his golden shafts imploies, here lights  
 His constant Lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
 Reigns here and revels; not in the bought smile  
 Of Harlots, loveleſs, joyleſs, unindeard,  
 Casual fruition, nor in Court Amours  
 Mixt Dance, or wanton Mask, or Midnight Bal,  
 Or Serenate, which the starv'd Lover sings  
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.  
 These lull'd by Nightingales imbraceing slept,  
 And on thir naked limbs the flourie roof  
 Showrd Rofes, which the Morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
 Bleſt pair; and O yet happiest if ye ſeek  
 No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night meafur'd with her shaddowie Cone  
 Half way up Hill this vast Sublunar Vault,  
 And from thir Ivoie Port the Cherubim  
 Forth issuing at th' accustomd hour flood arond  
 To thir night watches in warlike Parade,  
 When *Gabriel* to his next in power thus ſpake.

Uzzish, half these draw off, and coast the South  
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the North,  
 Our circuit meets full West. As flame they part  
 Half wheeling to the Shield, half to the Spear.

From

760

770

780

From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd  
That neer him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

790      *Ithuriel* and *Zephon*, with wing'd speed  
Search through this Garden, leav unsearcht no nook,  
But chiefly where those two fair Creatures Lodge,  
Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harme.

795      This Eevning from the Sun's decline arriv'd  
Who tells of som infernal Spirit seen  
Hitherward bent (who could have thought?)  
The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt: (seap'd  
Such where yefind, seise fast, and hither bring.

800      So saying, on he led his radiant Files,  
Daz'ling the Moon; these to the Bower direct  
In search of whom they fought: him there they  
Squat like a Toad, close at the eate of Eve; (found  
Allaying by his Devilish art to reach  
The Organs of her Fancie, and with them forge  
Illusions as he list, Phantasms and Dreams,  
Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
Th' animal Spirits that from pure blood arise  
Like gentle breaths from Rivers pure, thence raise  
At least distemp'rd, discontented thoughts,  
Vain hopes, vain aimes, inordinate desires  
810      Blown up with high conceits ingendring pride.  
Him thus intent *Ithuriel* with his Spear  
Touch'd lightly, for no falsehood can endure  
Touch of Celestial temper, but returns  
Of force to its own likeness: up he starts  
Discover'd and surpriz'd: As when a spark  
Lights on a heap of nitrous Powder, laid  
Fit for the Tusson Magazin to store  
Against a rumord Warr, the Smuttiegraine

815      With

With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the Aire :  
 So started up in his own shape the Fiend,  
 Back stept, those two fair Angels half amaz'd  
 So sudden to behold the griesslie King ;  
 Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon,

820

Which of those rebell Spirits adjadg'd to Hell  
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison, and transform'd,  
 Why satst thou like an enemie in waite,  
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep ?

Know ye not then said *Satan*, fill'd with scorn,  
 Know ye not me ? ye knew me once no mate  
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not loare ;  
 Not to know mee argues your selves unknown,  
 The lowest of your throng ; or if ye know,  
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
 Your message, like to end as much in vain ?  
 To whom thus *Zephon*, answering *Satan* with scorn.

828

Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,  
 Or undiminisht brightness, to be known  
 As when thou stoodst in Heav'n upright and pure ;  
 That Glorie then, when thou no more wast good,  
 Departed from thee, and thou resembl'st now  
 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foule,  
 But come, for thou, besure, shalt give account  
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
 This place inviolable, and these from harm.

828

So spake the Cherube, and his grave rebuke  
 Severe in youtful beautie, added grace  
 Invincible : abasht the Devil stoud,  
 And felt how awful goodness is, and law  
 Virtue in her shape how loyly saw, and piad  
 His loss ; but chiefly to find here oblervd

840

848

850

His

18 His lustre visibly impar'd; yet seem'd  
Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,  
Best with the best, the Sender not the sent,  
Or all at once; more glorie will be wonn,  
Or less be lost. Thy fear, said *Zephon* bold,  
Will save ustrial what the least can doe  
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

860 The Fiend repli'd not, overcome with rage;  
But like a proud Steed reind, went haukie on,  
Champing his iron curb: to strive or flie  
He held it vain; awe from above had quell'd  
His heart, not else dismaid. Now drew they nigh  
The western point, where those half-rounding  
Just met, & closing stood in squadron joind (guards  
Awaiting next command. To whom thir Chief  
*Gabriel* frorn the Front thus calld aloud.

870 O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet  
Hasting this way, and now by glimps discerne  
*Ithuriel* and *Zephon* through the shade,  
And with them comes a third of Regal port,  
But faded splendor wan; who by his gate  
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,  
Not likely to part hence without contest;  
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd  
And brief related whom they brought, wher found,  
How busied, in what form and posture coucht.

880 To whom with stern regard thus *Gabriel* spake.  
Why hast thou, *Satan*, broke the bounds prescrib'd  
To thy transgressions, and disturbed the charge  
Of others, who approve not to transgress  
By thy example, but have power and right

To

To question thy bold entrance on this place ;  
 Implo'id it seems to violate sleep, and those  
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ?

To whom thus *Satan* with contemptuous brow.  
*Gabriel*, thou hadst in Heav'n th' esteem of wise,  
 And such I held thee ; but this question askt  
 Puts me in doubt. Lives ther who loves his pain ?  
 Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
 Though thither doom'd ? Thou wouldst thy self, no  
 And boldly venture to whatever place (doubt,  
 Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to  
 Torment with ease, & soonest recompence (change  
 Dole with delight, which in this place I sought ;  
 To thee no reason ; who knowst only good,  
 But evil hast not tri'd ; and wilt object  
 His will who bound us ? Let him surer bate  
 His Iron Gates, if he intends our stay  
 In that dark durance : thus much what was askt.  
 The rest is true, they found me where they say ;  
 But that implies not violence or harme.

890

900

910

Thus hee in scorn. The warlike Angel mov'd,  
 Disdainfully half smiling thus repli'd.  
 O los's of one in Heav'n to judge of wise,  
 Since *Satan* fell, whom follie overthrew,  
 And now returns him from his prison scap't,  
 Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
 Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither  
 Unlicenc't from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd ;  
 So wise he judges it to fly from pain  
 However, and to scape his punishment.  
 So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wraught,  
 Which thou incurst by flying, meet thy flight

Seavenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
Can equal anger infinite provok't.

920 But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee  
Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them  
Less pain, less to be fled, or thou then they  
Less hardie to endure? courageous Chief,  
The first in flight from pain, had'st thou alleg'd  
To thy deserted host this cause of flight;  
Thou surely had'st not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answer'd frowning stern.  
Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
Insulting Angel, well thou knowst I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in Battel to thy aide  
The blasting volied Thunder made all speed  
930 And seconded thy else not dreaded Spear.

But still thy words at random, as before,  
Argue thy inexperience what behooves  
From hard assaies and ill successes past  
A faithful Leader, not to hazard all  
Through wayes of danger by himself untri'd.  
I therefore, I alone first undertook  
To wing the desolate Abyss, and spie  
This new created World, whereof in Hell  
Fame is not silent, here in hope to find

940 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers  
To settle here on Earth, or in mid Aire;  
Though for possession put to try once more  
What thou and thy gay Legions dare against;  
Whose easier busines were to serve thir Lord  
High up in Heav'n, with songs to hymne his Throne,  
And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To

To whom the warriour Angel soon repli'd.  
 To say and strait unsay, pretending first  
 Wise to flie pain, professing next the Spie,  
 Argues no Leader, but a lyar trac't,  
*satan*, and couldst thou faithful add? O name,  
 Of sacred name of faithfulness profan'd!

950

Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?  
 Armie of Fiends, fit body to fit head;  
 Was this your discipline and faith ingag'd,  
 Your military obedience, to dissolve  
 Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Power supream?  
 And thou fly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
 Patron of liberty, who more then thou  
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilly ador'd  
 Heav'n's awful Monarch? wherefore but in hope  
 To dispossess him, and thy self to reigne?  
 But mark what I arreede thee now, avant;  
 Flie thither whence thou fledst: iff from this houre  
 Within these hallowd limits thou appear,  
 Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,  
 And Seale thee so, as henceforth not to scorne  
 The facil gates of hell too slightly barrd.

960

So threatn'd hee, but *satan* to no threats  
 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage repli'd.

970

Then when I am thy captive talk of chaines,  
 Proud limitarie Cherube, but ère then  
 Farr heavier load thy self expect to feel  
 From my prevailing arme, though Heavens King  
 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy Compeers,  
 Us'd to the yoak; draw'st histriumphant wheels  
 In progress through the rode of Heav'n Star-pav'd.

While thus he spake th' Angelic Squadron bright

980 Turnd fierie red, sharpening in mooned hornes  
Thir Phalanx, and began to hemm him round  
With ported Spears, as thick as when a field  
Of *Ceres* ripe for harvest waving bends  
Her bearded Grove of ears, which way the wind  
Swayes them; the careful Plowman doubting stands  
Least on the threshing floore his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On th' other side *Satan* alarm'd  
Collecting all his might dilated stood,  
Like *Teneriff* or *Atlas* unremov'd;  
His stature reacht the Skie, and on his Crest  
990 Sat horror Plum'd; nor wanted in his grapse  
What seemd both Spear and Shield: now dreadful  
Might have ensu'd, nor onely Paradise (deeds  
In this commotion, but the Starrie Cope  
Of Heav'n perhaps, or all the Elements  
At least had gon to rack, disturb'd and torn  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray  
Hung forth in Heav'n his golden Scales, yet seen  
Betwixt *Astrea* and the *Scorpion* signe,  
1000 Wherein all things created first he weighd,  
The pendulous round Earth with ballanc't Aire  
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
Battels and Realms: in these he put two weights  
The sequel each of parting and of fight;  
The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam;  
Which *Gabriel* spying, thus bespake the Fiend.  
*Satan*, I know thy strength, and thou knowst mine,  
Neither our own but giv'n; what follie then  
To boast what Arms can doe, since thine no more  
1010 Then Heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubl'd now

To

Paradise lost. Book 4.

To trample thee as mire : for proof look up,  
And read thy Lot in yon celestial Sign (weak,  
Where thou art weigh'd, & shown how light, how  
If thou resist. The Fiend lookt up and knew  
His mounted scale aloft : nor more ; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

PARADISE

LOST.

BOOK

*The End of the Fourth Book.*

PARA



origin to substantiate both my new belief, and to prove

# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK V.



Ow Morn her rosie steps in th' Eastern  
Clime  
Advancing, sow'd the Earth with  
Orient Pearle,  
When *Adam* wak't, so custom'd, for  
his sleep

Was Aerie light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperat vapors bland, which th' only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, *Aurora's* fan,  
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill Matin Song  
Of Birds on every bough; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwak'd *Eve*  
With Tresses discompos'd, and glowing Cheek,  
As through unquiet rest: he on his side  
Leaning half-rais'd, with looks of cordial Love  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beautie, which whether waking or asleep,

Shot forth peculiar Graces, then with voice  
 Milde, as when *Zephyrus* on *Flora* breathes,  
 Her hand soft touching, whisperd thus. Awake  
 My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
 Heav'n's last beshigit, my ever new delight,  
 Awake, the morning shines, and the fresh field  
 Calls us, we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
 Our tended Plants, how blows the Citron Grove,  
 What drops the Myrrhe, & what the balmie Reed,  
 How Nature paints her colours, how the Bee  
 Sits on the Bloom extracting liqued sweet.

Such whispering wak'd her, but with start'd eye  
 On *Adam*, whom imbracing, thus she spake.

O Sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
 My Glorie, my Perfection, glad to see  
 Thy face, and Morn return'd, for this Night,  
 Such night till this I never pass'd, have dream'd,  
 If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,  
 Works of day pass't, or morrow's next delights,  
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
 Knew never till this irksome night; methought  
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it said,  
 Why sleepst thou, Eve? now is the pleasant time,  
 The cool, the silent, save where fence yields  
 To the night-warbling Bird, that now awake  
 Tunes sweetest his love-labord song; now reignes  
 Full Orb'd the Moon, and with more pleasing light  
 Shadowie sets off the face of things; in vain  
 If none regard; Heav'n wakes with all his eyes,  
 Whom to behold but thee, Natures desire,  
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment

Attracted

20

30

40

Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.  
I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;  
To find thee I directed then my walk ;  
50 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways  
That brought me on a sudden to the Tree  
Of interdicted Knowledge : fair it seem'd,  
Much fairer to my Fancie then by day :  
And as I wondring lookt, beside it stood  
One shap'd & wing'd like one of those from Heav'n  
By us oft seen ; his dewie locks distill'd  
Ambrosia ; ou that Tree he also gaz'd ;  
And O fair Plant, said he, with fruit sursharg'd,  
Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,  
60 Nor God, nor Man ; is Knowledge so despis'd ?  
Or envie, or what reserve forbids to taste ?  
Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
Longer thy offerd good, why else set here ?  
This said he paus'd not, but with ventrous Arne  
He pluckt, he tasted ; mee damp horror chil'd  
At such bold words voucht with a deed so bold :  
But, he shus overjoy'd, O Fruit Divine,  
Sweet of thy self, but much more sweet thus cropt,  
70 Forbidd'n here, it seems, as onely fit  
For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men :  
And why not Gods of Men, since good, the more  
Communicated, more abundant growes,  
The Author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?  
Here, happie Creature, fair Angelic Eos,  
Partake thou also ; happie though thou art,  
Happier thou mayst be, worthier canst not be :  
Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods  
Thy self a Goddess, not to Earth confind,

But sometimes in the Air, as wee, sometimes  
 Ascend to Heav'n, by merit thine, and see  
 What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.  
 So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
 Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part  
 Which he had pluckt; the pleasant savourie smell  
 So quick'd appetite, that I, methought,  
 Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the Clouds  
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
 The Earth outstretcht immense, a prospect wide  
 And various: wondring at my flight and change  
 To this high exaltation; suddenly 80  
 My Guide was gon, and I, me thought, sunk down,  
 And fell asleep; but O how glad I wak'd  
 To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her Night  
 Related, and thus Adam answerd sad.

Best Image of my self and dearer half,  
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
 Affects me equally; nor can I like  
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;  
 Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
 Created pure. But know that in the Soule  
 Are many lesser Faculties that serve 100  
 Reason as chief; among these Fansie next  
 Her office holds; of all external things,  
 Which the five watchful Senses represent,  
 She forms Imaginations, Aerie shapes,  
 Which Reason joyning or disjoyning, frames  
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call  
 Our knowledge or opinion; then retires  
 Into her private Cell when Nature rests.  
 Oft in her absence mimic Fansie wakes

To 110

Q

To imitate her ; but misjoyning shapes,  
 Wilde work produces oft, and most in dreams,  
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
 Som such resemblances methinks I find  
 Of our last Eevnings talk, in this thy dream,  
 But with addition strange ; yet be not sad.  
 Evil into the mind of God or Man  
 May come and go, so unprov'd, and leave  
 No spot or blame behind : Which gives me hope  
 120 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,  
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
 Be not disheart'nd then, nor cloud those looks  
 That wont to be more cheerful and serene  
 Then when fair Morning first smiles on the World,  
 And let us to our fresh imployments rise  
 Among the Groves, the Fountains, and the Flours  
 That open now thir choicest bosom'd smells  
 Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.

130 So cheard he his fair Spouse, and she was cheard,  
 But silently a gentle tear let fall  
 From either eye, and wip'd them with her haire ;  
 Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
 Each in thir chrystal sluice, hee ere they fell  
 Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
 And pious awe, that feard to have offended.

140 So all was cleard, and to the Field they haste,  
 But first from under shadie arborous roof,  
 Soon as they forth were come to open light  
 Of day-spring, and the Sun, who scarce up risen  
 With wheels yet hov'ring o're the Ocean brim,  
 Shot paralel to the earth his dewie ray,  
 Discovering in wide Lantskip all the East

Of Paradise and *Edens* happy Plains,  
 Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
 Thir Orifons, each Morning duly paid  
 In various style, for neither various style  
 Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
 Thir Maker, in fit strains pronounc't or sung  
 Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence  
 Flowd from thir lips, in Prose or numerous Verse,  
 More tuneable then needed Lute or Harp  
 To add more sweetnes, and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,  
 Almighty, thine this universal Frame,  
 Thus wondrous fair ; thy self how wondrous then !  
 Unspeakable, who sitst above these Heavens  
 To us invisible or dimly seen  
 In these thy lowest works, yet these declare  
 Thy goodness beyond thought, and Power Divine :  
 Speak yee who best can tell, ye Sons of light,  
 Angels, for yee behold him, and with songs  
 And choral symphonies, Day without Night,  
 Circle his Throne rejoicing, yee in Heav'n,  
 On Earth joyn all yee Creatures to extoll  
 Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.  
 Fairest of Starrs, last in the train of Night,  
 If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
 Sure pledge of day, that crownst the smiling Morn  
 With thy bright Circlet, praise him in thy Spheare  
 While day arises, that sweet hour of Prime.

Thou Sun, of this great World both Eye and Soule,  
 Acknowledge him thy Greater, sound his praise  
 In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
 And when high Noo hast gaind, & when thou fallst.

150

160

170

Moon, that now meetit the orient Sun, now flist  
 With the fixt Starrs, fixt in thir Orb that flies,  
 And yee five other wandring Fires that move  
 In mystic Dance not without Song, resound  
 His praise, who out of Darknes call'd up Light.

180 Aire, and ye Elements the eldest birth  
 Of Natures Womb, that in quaternion run  
 Perpetual Circle, multiform ; and mix  
 And nourish all things, let your ceasles change  
 Varie to our great Maker still new praise.

Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise  
 From Hill or steaming Lake, duskie or grey,  
 Till the Sun paint your fleecie skirts with Gold,  
 In honour to the Worlds great Author rise,  
 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncoloured skie,  
 190 Or wet the thirstie Earth with falling flowers,  
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.

His praise ye Winds, that from four Quarters blow,  
 Breath soft or loud; and wave your tops, ye Pines,  
 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.  
 Fountains and yee, that warble, as ye flow,  
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds,  
 That singing up to Heaven Gate ascend,  
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise ;  
 200 Yee that in Waters glide, and yee that walk  
 The Earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep ;  
 Witnes if I be silent, Morn or Eeven,  
 To Hill, or Valley, Fountain, or fresh shade  
 Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.  
 Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still  
 To give us onely good ; and if the nght

## Paradise lost. Book 5.

Have gathered aught of evil or conceald,  
Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark.

So pray'd they innocent, and to thir thoughts  
Firm peace recover'd soon and wonted calm.  
On to thir mornings rural work they haste  
Among sweet dewes and flours; where any row  
Of Fruit-trees overwoodie reachd too farr  
Thir pamperd boughes, and needed hands to check  
Fruitless imbraces: or they led the Vine  
To wed her Elm; she spous'd about him twines  
Her mariageable arms, and with her brings  
Her dowr th' adopted Clusters, to adorn  
His barren leaves. Them thus imploid beheld  
With pittie Heav'n's high King, and to him call'd  
*Raphael*, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd  
To travel with *Tobias*, and secur'd  
His marriage with the seaventimes-wedded Maid.

210

220

230

*Raphael*, said hee, thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
*satan* from Hell scap't through the darksom Gulf  
Hath rais'd in Paradise, and how disturbd  
This night the human pair, how he designes  
In them at once to ruin all mankind.  
Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend  
Converse with *Adam*, in what Bowre or shade  
Thou find'st him from the heat of Noon retir'd,  
To respit his day-labour with repast,  
Or with repose; and such discourse bring on,  
As may advise him of his happie state,  
Happines in his power left free to will,  
Left to his own fre<sup>g</sup> Will, his Will though free,  
Yet mutable; whence warne him to beware  
He swerve not too secure: tell him withall

His

His danger, and from whom, what enemie  
 240 Late fallen himself from Heav'n, is plotting now  
 The fall of others from like state of bliss;  
 By violence, no, for that shall be withheld,  
 But by deceit and lies; this let him know,  
 Least wilfully transgressing he pretend  
 Surprisal, unadmonisht, unforewarnd.

So spake th' Eternal Father, and fulfillld  
 All Justice: nor delaid the winged Saint  
 After his charge receivd; but from among  
 Thousand Celestial Ardors, where he stood  
 250 Vaild with his gorgeous wings, up springing light  
 Flew through the midst of Heav'n; th' angelic Quires  
 On each hand parting, to his speed gave way  
 Through all th' Empyreal road; till at the Gate  
 Of Heav'n arriv'd, the gate self-opend wide  
 On golden Hinges turning, as by work  
 Divine the sov'rnan Architect had fram'd.  
 From hence, no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
 Starr interpos'd, however small he sees,  
 Not unconform to other shining Globes,  
 260 Earth and the Gard'n of God, with Cedars crownd  
 Above all Hills. As when by night the Glas  
 Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes  
 Imagind Lands and Regions in the Moon:  
 Or Pilot from amidst the *Cyclades*  
 Delos or Samos first appeering kenns  
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
 He speeds, and through the vast Ethereal Skie  
 Sails between worlds & worlds, with steddie wing  
 Now on the polar windes, then with quick Fann  
 270 Winnows the buxom Air; till within loare

Of

In some copies a paragraph commences here  
 and no column is found after "cloud".

Paradise lost. Book 5.

Of Towing Eagles, to all the Fowles he seems  
A *Phœnix*, gaz'd by all, as that sole Bird  
When to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's  
Bright Temple, to *Egyptian Theb's* he flies.  
At once on th' Eastern cliff of Paradise  
He lights, and to his proper shape returns  
A Seraph wing'd ; six wings he wore, to shade  
His lineaments Divine ; the pair that clad  
Each shoulder broad, came mantling o're his brest  
With regal Ornament ; the middle pair  
Girt like a Starrie Zone his waste, and round  
Skirted his loines and thighes with downie Gold  
And colours dipt in Heav'n ; the third his feet  
Shaddow'd from either heele with feather'd maile  
Skie-tinctur'd grain. Like *Maia's* son he stood,  
And shook his Plumes, that Heav'ly fragrance fill'd  
The circuit wide. Strait knew him all the Bands  
Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,  
And to his message high in honour rise ;  
For on som message high they gues'd him bound. 290  
Thir glittering Tents he pass'd, and now is come  
Into the blissful field, through Groves of Myrrh,  
And flouring Odours, Cassia, Nard, and Balme ;  
A Wildernes of sweets ; for Nature here  
Wantond as in her prime, and plaide at will  
Her Virgin Fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
Wilde above rule or Art ; enormous bliss.  
Him through the spicie Forrest onward com  
*Adam* discernd, as in the dore he sat  
Of his coole Bowre, while now the mounted Sun  
Shot down direct his fervid Raies to warne  
Earths inmost womb, more warmth then *Adam* need'd ; 300  
And

And *Eve* within, due at her hour prepar'd  
 For dinner favourie fruits, of taste to please  
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst  
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milkie stream,  
 Berrie or Grape : to whom thus *Adam* call'd.

310 Haste hither *Eve*, and worth thy sight behold  
 Eastward among those Trees, what glorious shape  
 Comes this way moving ; seems another Morn  
 Ris'n on mid-noon ; som great behest from Heav'n  
 To us perhaps he brings, and will voutsafe  
 This day to be our Guest. But goe with speed,  
 And what thy stores contain, bring forth and poure  
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
 Our Heav'ly stranger ; well we may afford  
 Our givers thir own gifts, and large bestow  
 From large bestowd, where Nature multiplies  
 Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows  
 320 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.

To whom thus *Eve*. *Adam*, earths hallowd mould,  
 Of God inspir'd, small store will serve, where store,  
 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk ;  
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes :  
 But I will haste and from each bough and break,  
 Each Plant & juciest Gourd will pluck such choice  
 To entertain our Angel guest, as hee  
 Beholding shall confess that here on Earth  
 330 God hath dispenst his bounties as in Heav'n.

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
 What choice to chuse for delicacie best,  
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix

Tastes,

Tastes not well joyn'd, inelegant, but bring  
 Taste after taste upheld with kindest change,  
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
 Whatever Earth all-bearing Mother yeilds  
 In Indick East or West, or middle shoare  
 In Pontus or the fuisse Coast, or where  
 Alcinous heig'd, fruit of all kindes in estate,  
 Rough, or smooth rin'd, or bearded husk, or shell  
 She garners, Tribute large, and on the board  
 Helpes with unsparing hand, for drink the Grape  
 She crushes, inoffensive moult, and meathes  
 From many a berrie, and from sweet kernels prest  
 She tempers dulcet creams, nor these to hold  
 Wants her sievells pure, then strews the ground  
 With Rose and Odours from the shrub unlim'd.  
 Mean while our Primitive great Sire, to meet  
 His god-like Guest, walks forth, without more train  
 Accompani'd then with his own compleat  
 Perfections, in himself was all his state,  
 More solemn then the tedious pomp that waits  
 On Princes, when thir rich Retinue long  
 Of Horses led, and Grooms besmeard with Gold  
 Dazles the croud, and sets them all agape.  
 Neerer his presence *Adam* though not awd,  
 Yet with submis approach and reverence meek,  
 As to a superior Nature, bowing low,

340

350

360

Thus said. Native of Heav'n, for other place  
 None can then Heav'n such glorious shape contain,  
 Since by descending from the Thrones above,  
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while  
 To want, and honour these, youtsafe with us  
 Two onely, who yet by sov'ren gift posseſſ

R

This

This spacious ground, in yonder shadie Bowre  
To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears  
To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
370 Be over, and the Sun more coole decline.

Whom thus the Angelic Virtue answerd smilde.  
*Adam*, I therefore came, nor art thou such  
Created, or such plate hast here to dwell,  
As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heav'n  
To visit thee; lead on then where thy Bowre  
Oreshades; for these mid-hours, till Eevning rise  
I have at will. So to the Silvan Lodge  
They came, that like *Pomona's* Arbour smil'd  
With flourets deck't and fragrant smells; but *Eve*  
380 Undeckt, save with her self more lovely fair  
Then Wood-Nymph, or the fairest Goddess feign'd  
Of three that in Mount *Zed* naked strove,  
Stood to entertain her guest from Heav'n; no vaile  
Shee needed, Virtue-proof, no thought infirme  
Alterd her cheek. On whom the Angel *Haile*  
Bestowd, the holy salutation us'd  
Long after to blest *Marie*, second *Eve*.

Haile Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful Womb  
Shall fill the World more numerous with thy Sons  
Then with these various fruits the Trees of God  
Have heap'd this Table. Rais'd of grassie terf  
Thir Table was, and mossie seats had round,  
And on her ample Square from side to side  
All *Autumne* pil'd, though *Spring* and *Autumne* here  
Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold,  
No fear lest Dinner coole; when thus began  
Our Authour. Heav'ly stranger, please to taste  
These bounties which our Nourisher, from whom

All

All perfet good unmeasur'd out, descends,  
To us for food and for delight hath caus'd  
The Earth to yeild ; unsavourie food perhaps  
To spiritual Natures ; only this I know,  
That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what he gives  
(Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part  
Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found  
No ingrateful food : and food alike those pure  
Intelligenitial substances require.  
As doth your Rationals, and both contain  
Within them every lower facultie  
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
And corporeal to incorporeal turn.

For know, whatever was created, needs  
To be sustaint and fed ; of Elements  
The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,  
Earth and the Sea feed Air, the Air those Fires  
Ethereal, and as lowest first the Moon ;  
Whence in her vilsage round those spots, unpurg'd  
Vapours not yet into her substance turnd.  
Nor doth the Moon no nourishment exhale  
From her moist Continent to higher Orbes.

The Sun that light imparts to all, receives  
From all his alimental recompence  
In humid exhalations, and at Even  
Sups with the Ocean : though in Heav'n the Trees  
Of life ambrosial frutage bear, and vines (Morn  
Yeild Nectar, though from off the bougħs each  
We brush) mollisſtuous Dewes, and find the ground  
Cover'd with pearly grain : yet God hath here

400

410

420

430

Varied his bounty so with new delights,  
 As may compare with Heavens; and to taste  
 Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,  
 And to thir viands fell, nor seemingly  
 The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss  
 Of Theologians, but with keen dispatch  
 Of real hunger, and concoctive heate  
 To transubstantiate; what redounds, transpires  
 Through Spirits with ease; nor wonder; if by fire  
 440 Of sooty coal the Empiric Alchimist  
 Can turn, or holds it possible to turn  
 Metals of drossiest Ore to perfect Gold  
 As from the Mine. Mean while at Table Eve  
 Ministerd naked, and thir flowing cups  
 With pleasant liquors crown'd; O innocence  
 Deserving Paradise! if ever, then, world to  
 Then had the Sons of God, excuse to have his  
 Enamour'd at that sight; but in those hearts  
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
 450 Was understood, the injur'd Lovers Hell.  
 Thus when with meats & drincks they had sufficeid,  
 Not burd'nd Nature, sudden mind arose  
 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass  
 Given him by this great Conference to know  
 Of things above his World, and of thir being  
 Who dwell in Heav'n, whose excellency he saw  
 Transcend his own so farre, whose radiant forms  
 Divine effulgence, whose high Power so far  
 Exceeded human, and his wary speech  
 460 Thus to th' Empyreal Minister he fram'd  
 Inhabitant with God, now know I well  
 Thy favour, in this honour done to man,  
 Under

Under whose lowly roof thou hast voutsafte  
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste, not but  
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so, as if God had  
As that more willingly thou couldst not seem  
At Heav'n's high feasts to have fed; yet what com-

To whom the winged Hiearch repli'd (page 470)  
O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom  
All things proceed, and up to him return; If not deprav'd from good, created all  
Such to perfection, the first matter all, indu'd with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and in things that live, of life;  
But more refin'd, more spirituous, and pure, O  
As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending  
Each in this severall active Sphere assign'd,  
Till body and spirit work y in bounds  
Proportion'd to each kind; so from th' earth cleaves  
Springs lighter, the green stalk from whence the  
More varie, last the bright consummate flower  
Spirits odorous brethes: flower and thir fruit  
Mans nourishment, by gradual subtil'd  
To vital spirits, to animall, as bruit of W  
To intellectual, give both life and sense, d. of H  
Fancie and understanding, whence the soule  
Receives, and reason is her being, d. of T  
Discourse of mannes discourse, d. of A  
Is oftest yours, the latter most is ours, d. of H  
Differing but in degree, of kind the same, d. of T  
Wonder not then, what God for you saw good, d. of T  
If I refuse not but convert, as you, d. of H  
To proper substance, time may come when men  
With Angels may participate, and find

No inconvenient Diet, nor too light Fare :  
 And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
 Your bodies may at last turn all to Spirit,  
 Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd ascend  
 Ethereal, as wee, or may at choice  
 500 Here or in Heav'ly Paradises dwell ;  
 If ye be found obedient, and retain  
 Unalterably firm his love entire  
 Whose progenie you are. Mean while enjoy  
 Your fill what happines this happy state  
 Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the Patriarch of mankind replid :  
 O favourable spirit, propitious guest,  
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set  
 150 From center to circumference, whereon  
 In contemplation of created things  
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,  
 What meant that caution joind, if ye be found  
 Obedient ? can wee want obedience then  
 To him, or possibly his love deserv ?  
 Who formd us from the dust, and plac'd us here,  
 Full to the utmost measure of what life  
 Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the Angel, Son of Heav'n and Earth,  
 520 Attend : That shou art happy, owe to God,  
 That thou continu'st such, owe to thy self,  
 That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.  
 This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd,  
 God made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
 And good he made thee, but to persevere  
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will.

By

By nature free, not over-rul'd by Fate  
 Inextricable, or strict necessity ;  
 Our voluntarie service he requires,  
 Not our necessitated, such with him  
 Findes no acceptance, nor can find; for how  
 Can hearts, not free, be tri'd whether they serve ?  
 Willing or no, who will but what they must  
 By Destinie, and can no other choose ?  
 My self and all th' Angelic Host that stand  
 In sight of God entrap'd; our happy state  
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;  
 On other surety none ; freely we serve.  
 Because wee freely love, as in our will  
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall :  
 And som are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,  
 And so from Heav'n to deepest Hell ; O fall  
 From what high state of bliss into what woe !

530

540

550

To whom our great Progenitor. Thy words  
 Attentive, and with more delighted eare  
 Divine instruc'ter, I have heard, then when  
 Cherubic Songs by night from neighbouring Hills  
 Aereal Music send : nor knew I not  
 To be both will and deed created free ;  
 Yet that we never shall forget to love  
 Our maker, and obey him whose command  
 Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
 Assur'd me and still assure: though what thou tellst  
 Hath past in Heav'n, som doubt within me move,  
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
 Worthy of Sacred silence to be heard ;  
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the Sun

Had

560 Hath finisht half his journey, and scarce begins  
His other half in the great Zone of Heav'n.  
Thus Adam made request, and Raphael  
After short pause assenting, thus began.

562 High matter thou insinuat'st me, O prime of men,  
Sad task and hard, for how shall I relate  
To human sense th' invisible exploits  
Of warring Spirits; how without remorse  
The ruin of so many glorious once  
And perfect while they stood; how last Unfould  
The secrets of another world, perhaps  
570 Not lawfull to reveal; yet for thy good  
This is dispense't, and what surmounts the reach  
Of human sense, I shall delineate so  
By lik'ning spiritual to corporal forms,  
As may express them best; though what if Earth  
Be but the shadow of Heav'n, and things thereto  
Each to other like, more then on earth is thought?

572 As yet this world was not, and Chaos wilde  
Reign'd where these Heav'ns now rowl, where Earth  
Upon her Counterpois'd, when on a day (now rests  
(For Time, though in Eternitie, applid  
To motion, measures all things durable  
By present, past, and future) on such day  
As Heav'n's great Year brings forth, th' Empyreal  
580 Of Angels by Imperial summons call'd, (Holt  
Intumerable before th' Almighty's Throne  
Forthwith from all the ends of Heav'n appeyrd  
Under thir Hierarchs in orders bright  
Ten thousand thousand Ensignes high advanc'd  
Standards, and Gonfalonis twixt Van and Reare  
Streame in the Aire, and for distinction serve

Of Hierarchies, of Orders, and Degrees ;  
Or in thir glittering Tissues bear imblaz'd  
Holy Memorials, acts of Zeale and Love  
Recorded eminent. Thus when in Orbes  
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
Orb within Orb, the Father infinite,  
By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,  
A midst as from a flaming Mount, whoseop  
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

600

Hear all ye Angels, Progenie of Light,  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Pow'-  
Hear my Decree, which unrevok't shall stand.  
This day I have begot whom I declare  
My onely Son, and on this holy Hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand ; your Head I him appoint ;  
And by my Self have sworn to him shall bow  
All knees in Heav'n, and shall confess him Lord :  
Under his great Vice-gerent Reign abide  
United as one individual Soule  
For ever happie : him who disobeys  
Mee disobeys, breaks union, and that day  
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
Into utter darkness, deep ingulft, his place  
Ordain'd without redēption, without end.

610

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words  
All seem'd well please'd, all seem'd, but were not all.  
That day, as other solem dayes, they spent  
In song and dance about the sacred Hill,  
Mystical dance, which yonder starrie Spheare  
Of Planets and of fixt in all her Wheeles  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,

620

Eccentric, intervolv'd, yet regular  
 Then most, when most irregular they seem :  
 And in thir motions harmonie Divine  
 So smooths her charming toses, that Gods own ear  
 Listens delighted. Evening approached  
 (For we have also our Evening and our Morn,  
 We ours for change delectable, not need)

630 Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn  
 Desirous, all in Circles as they stood,  
 Tables are set, and on a sudden pit'd  
 With Angels Food, and rubied Nectar flows :  
 In Pearl, in Diamond, and miffle Gold,  
 Fruit of delicious Vines, the growth of Heav'n.  
 They eat, they drink, and with refection sweet  
 Are fill'd, before th' all-bounteous King, who  
 With copious hand, rejoicing in thir joy,  
 Now when ambrosial Night with Clouds enthrall'd  
 640 From that high mount of God, whence light & shade  
 Spring both, the face of brightest Heav'n had chang'd  
 To grateful Twilight (for Night comes not there  
 In darker veile) and roseat Devis disp'r'd  
 All but the unleeping eyes of God to rest,  
 Wide over all the Plain, and wider far,  
 Then all this globous Earth in Plain outspred,  
 (Such are the Courts of God) The Angelsthrong  
 Dispers'd in Bands, and Files their Camp extend  
 650 By living Streams among the Trees of Life,  
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden ready'd  
 Celestial Tabernacles, where they sleep  
 Fann'd with cool Windes, save those who in this  
 Melodious Hymns about the sovran Throne  
 Alternate all night long, but not so wak'd

# Paradise lost. Book 5.

satan, so call him now, his former name  
Is heard no more Heav'n; he of the first,  
If not the first Arch-Angel, great in Power,  
In favour and preeminence, yet fraught  
With envie against the Son of God, that day  
Honoured by his great Father, and proclaim'd  
Messias King anointed, could not bear  
Through pride that sight, and thought himself im-  
Deep malice thence conceiving & disdain, spair'd.  
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky houre  
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd  
With all his Legions to dislodge, and leave  
Unworshipt, unobey'd the Throne supream  
Contemneous, and his next subordinate  
Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

660

670

680

Sleepst thou Companion dear, what sleep can  
Thy eye-lids? and remembrest what Decree (close  
Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips  
Of Heav'n's Almighty) Thou to me thy thoughts  
Wast wont; I mine to thee was wont to impart; Both waking we were obeis; how then can now  
Thy sleep dissent? new Laws thou seest impos'd;  
New Laws from him who reigns, new minds may  
In us who serve, new Counsels, to debate  
What doubtful may ensue, more in this place  
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou  
Of all those Myriads which we lead the chief;  
Tell them that by command, ere yet dim Night  
Her shadowie Cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
And all who under me thir Banners wave,  
Homeward with flying march where we possess  
The Quarters of the North, there to prepare

Fit entertainment to receive our King  
The great *Messiah*, and his new commands,  
Who speedily through all the Hierarchies  
Intends to pass triumphant, and give Laws.

690

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
Bad influence into th' unwarie brest  
Of his Associate; hee together calls,  
Or several one by one, the Regent Powers,  
Under him Regent, tells, as he was taught,  
That the most High commanding, now ere Night,  
Now ere dim Night had disincumberd Heav'n,  
The great Standard was to move;  
Tells the superiour cause, and casts between  
700 Ambiguous words, and jealousies, to sound  
Or taint integritie; but all obey'd  
The wonted signal, and superior voice  
Of thir great Potentate; for great indeed  
His name, and high was his degree in Heav'n;  
His count'rance, as the Morning Starr that guides  
The starrie flock, allur'd them; and with lyes  
Drew after him the third part of Heav'n's Host:  
Mean while th' Eternal eye, whose sight discernes  
Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy Mount  
710 And from within the golden Lamps that burne  
Nightly before him, saw without thir light  
Rebellion rising, saw in whom, how spred  
Among the sons of Morn, what multitudes  
Were banded to oppose his high Decree;  
And smiling to his onely Son thus said.  
Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,  
Neerly it now concernes us to be sure

700

710

Of

Of our Omnipotence, and with what Arms  
We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
Of Deitie or Empire; such a foe  
Is rising, who intends to erect his Throne  
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North; 720  
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
In battel, what our Power is, or our right.  
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
With speed what force is left, and all employ  
In our defence, lest unawares we lose  
This our high place, our Sanctuarie, our Hill.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear  
Light'ning Divine, ineffable, serene,  
Made answer. Mightie Father, thou thy foes  
Justly hast in derision, and secure  
Laugh'st at thir vain designes and tumults vain,  
Matter to mee of Glory, whom thir hate  
Illustrates, when they see all Regal Power  
Giv'n me to quell thir pride, and in event  
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
Thy Rebels, or be found the worst in Heav'n.

So spake the Son, but *satan* with his Powers  
Farr was advanc't on winged speed, an Host  
Innumerable as the Starrs of Night,  
Or Starrs of Morning, Dew-drops, which the Sun  
Impearls on every leaf and every flouer.  
Regions they pass'd, the mightie Regencies  
Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones  
In thir triple Degrees, Regions to which  
All thy Dominion, *Adam*, is no more.  
Then what this Garden is to all the Earth,  
And all the Sea, from one entire globosc

750  
Stretcht

760

Stretcht into Longitude; which having pass'd  
 At length into the limits of the North  
 They came, and *satan* to his Royal seat  
 High on a Hill, far blazing, as a Mount  
 rais'd on a Mount, with Pyramids and Towns  
 From Diamond Quarries hew'n, & Rocks of Gold,  
 The Palace of great *Lucifer*, (so call  
 That Structure in the Dialect of men  
 Interpreted) which not long after, hee  
 Affecting all equality with God,  
 In imitation of that Mount whereon  
*Messiah* was declar'd in sight of Heav'n,  
 The Mountain of the Congregation call'd;  
 For thither he assembl'd all his Train,  
 Pretending so commanded to consult  
 About the great reception of thir King,  
 Thither to come, and with calumnious Art  
 Of counterfeted truth thus held thir ears.

770

Thrones, Dominations, Prinedomes, Vertues,  
 If these magnific Titles yet remain (Powers,  
 Not meerly titular, since by Decree  
 Another now hath to himself ingross't  
 All Power, and us eclips't under the name  
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste  
 Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,  
 This onely to consult how we may best  
 With what may be devis'd of honours new  
 Receive him coming to receive from us  
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile,  
 Too much to one, but doltie how endur'd,  
 To one and to his image now proclaim'd?  
 But what if better counsels might erect

780

Our

# Paradise lost. Book 5.

Our minds and teach us to cast off this Yoke?  
Will ye submit your necks, and chuse to bend  
The supple knee? ye will not, if I trust  
To know ye right, or if ye know your selves  
Natives and Sons of Heav'n possesst before  
By none, and if not equal all, yet free,  
Equally free; for Orders and Degrees  
Jarr not with liberty, but well consist.  
Who can in reason then or right assume  
Monarchie over such as live by right  
His equals, if in power and splendor less,  
In freedome equal? or can introduce  
Law and Edict on us, who without law  
Erre not, much less for this to be our Lord,  
And look for adoration to th' abuse  
Of those Imperial Titles which assert  
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve?

790

Thus farr his bold discourse without controule  
Had audience, when among the Seraphim  
*Abdiel*, then whom none with more zeale ador'd  
The Deitie, and divine commands obeir'd,  
Stood up, and in a flame of zeale severe  
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

800

O argument blasphemous, false and proud!  
Words which no eare ever to hear in Heav'n  
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate  
In place thy self so high above thy Peeres.  
Canst thou with impious obloquie condemne  
The just Decree of God, pronounce't and sworn,  
That to his only Son by right enda'd  
With Regal Scepter, every Soule in Heav'n  
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due

810

Confess

Confess him righteous King ? unjust thou saist  
Flatly unjust, to binde with Laws the free,  
And equal over equals to let Reigne,  
One over all with unsucceeded power.

820 Shalt thou give Law to God, shalt thou dispute  
With him the points of libertie, who made  
Thee what thou art, & formd the Pow'rs of Heav'n  
Such as he pleasd, and circumscrib'd thir being ?  
Yet by experience taught we know how good,  
And of our good, and of our dignitie  
How provideut he is, how farr from thought  
To make us les, bent rather to exalt  
Our happie state under one Head more neer  
United. But to grant it thee unjust,  
That equal over equals Monarch Reigne :  
830 Thy self though great & glorious dost thou count,  
Or all Angelic Nature joind in one,  
Equal to him begotten Son, by whom  
As by his Word the mighty Father made  
All things, ev'n thee, and all the Spirits of Heav'n  
By him created in thir bright degrees,  
Crown'd them with Glory, & to thir Glory nam'd  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Vertues, Pow'-  
Essential Powers, nor by his Reign obscur'd, (ers  
But more illustrious made, since he the Head  
840 One of our number thus reduc't becomes,  
His Laws our Laws, all honour to him done  
Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,  
And tempt not these ; but hast n to appease  
Th' incensed Father, and th' incensed Son,  
While Pardon may be found in time besought,  
So spake the servent Angel, but his zeale

None

Paradise lost. Book 5.

None seconded, as out of season judg'd,  
Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd  
Th' Apostat, and more haughty thus repli'd.  
That we were form'd then faist thou? & the work 850  
Of secondarie hands, by task transferd

From Father to his Son? strange point and new!  
Doctrin which we would know whence learnt: who  
When this creation was? rememberst thou (saw  
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?  
We know no time when we were not as now;  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd  
By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course  
Had circl'd his full Orbe, the birth mature  
Of this our native Heav'n, Ethereal Sons.

Our puissance is our own, our own right hand  
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proot to try  
Who is our equal: then thou shalt behold  
Whether by supplication we intend  
Address, and to begirt th' Almighty Throne  
Beseaching or besieging. This report,  
These tidings carrie to th' anointed King;  
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said, and as the sound of waters deep  
Hoarce murmur echo'd to his words applause  
Through the infinite Host, nor less for that  
The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone  
Encompas'd round with foes, thus answerd bold.

O alienate from God, O spirit accurst,  
Forsak'n of all good; I see thy fall  
Determined, and thy hapless crew involv'd  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spred  
Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth

No more be troubl'd how to quit the yoke  
880 Of Gods *Messiah* ; those indulgent Laws  
Will not be now voutsaf't, other Decrees  
Against thee are gon forth without recall ;  
That Golden Scepter which thou didst reject  
Is now an Iron Rod to bruise and breake  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise,  
Yet not for thy advise or threats I fly  
These wicked Tents devoted, least the wrauth  
Impendent, raging into sudden flame  
Distinguish not : for soon expect to feel  
890 His Thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
Then who created thee lamenting learne,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.  
So spake the Seraph *Abdiel* faithful found,  
Among the faithles, faithful only hee ;  
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,  
Unshak'n, unseduc'd, unterrifi'd  
His Loyaltie he kept, his Love, his Zeale ;  
Nor number, nor example with him wrought  
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind  
900 Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he susteind  
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught ;  
And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd  
On those proud Towns to swift destruction doom'd.

*The End of the Fifth Book.*

P A R A-



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK VI.

Within the Mount of God, fast by his Throne,  
Where light and darknes in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through  
Grateful vicissitude, like Day and Night; (Heav'n  
Light issues forth, and at the other dore  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her houre (well  
To veile the Heav'n, though darknes there might  
Seem twilight here; and now went forth the Morn  
Such as in highest Heav'n, arrayd in Gold  
Empyreal, from before her vanisht Night,

Shot through with orient Beams: when all the Plain  
Coverd with thick embattel'd Squadrons bright,  
Chariots and flaming Armes, and fierie Steeds  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:  
Warr he perceav'd, warr in procinct, and found  
Already known what he for news had thought  
To have reported: gladly then he mixt  
Among those friendly Powers who him receav'd  
With joy and acclamations loud, that one  
That of so many Myriads fall'n, yet one  
Returnd not lost: On to the sacred hill  
They led him high applauded, and present  
Before the seat supream; from whence a voice  
From midst a Golden Cloud thus milde was heard.  
Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought  
The better fight, who single hast maintaing  
Against revolted multitudes the Cause  
Of Truth, in word mightier then they in Armes;  
And for the testimonie of Truth hast born  
Universal reproach, far worse to beare  
Then violence: for this was all thy care  
To stand approv'd in sight of God, though Worlds  
Judg'd thee perverse: the easier conquest now  
Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
Back on thy foes more glorious to return  
Then scornd thou didst depart, and to subdue  
By force, who reason for thir Law refuse,  
Right reason for thir Law, and for thir King  
*Messiah*, who by right of merit Reigns.  
Goe *Michael* of Celestial Armies Prince,  
And thou in Military prowess next  
*Gabriel*, lead forth to Battel these my Sons

Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints  
 By Thousands and by Millions rang'd for fight ;  
 Equal in number to that Godless crew  
 Rebellious, them with Fire and hostile Arms  
 Fearless assault, and to the brow of Heav'n  
 Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss,  
 Into thir place of punishment, the Gulf  
 Of *Tartarus*, which ready opens wide  
 His fiery *Chaos* to receave thir fall.

So spake the Sovran voice, and Clouds began  
 To darken all the Hill, and smoak to rowl  
 In duskie wreathes, reluctant flames, the signe  
 Of wrauth awak't : nor with less dread the loud  
 Ethereal Trumpet from on high gan blow :  
 At which command the Powers Militant,  
 That stood for Heav'n, in mighty Quadrate joyn'd  
 Of Union irresistible, mov'd on  
 In silence thir bright Legions, to the sound  
 Of instrumental Harmonie that breath'd  
 Heroic Ardor to advent'rous deeds  
 Under thir God-like Leaders, in the Cause  
 Of God and his *Messiah*. On they move  
 Indissolubly firm ; nog obvious Hill,  
 Nor streit'ning Vale, nor Wood, nor Stream divides  
 Thir perfet ranks ; for high above the ground  
 Thir march was, and the passive Air upbore  
 Thir nimble tread ; as when the total kind  
 Of Birds in orderly array on wing  
 Came summond over *Eden* to receive  
 Thir names of thee ; so over many a tract  
 Of Heav'n they march'd, and many a Province wide  
 Tenfold the length of this terrene : at last

50

60

70

80 Farr in th' Horizon to the North appeer'd  
 From skirt to skirt a fierie Region, stretcht  
 In battailous aspect, and neerer view  
 Bristl'd with upright bea'rs innumerable  
 Of rigid Spears, and Helmets throng'd, and Shields  
 Various, with boar&ful Argument portraide,  
 The banded Powers of *Satan* hasting on  
 With furious expedition; for they weend  
 That self same day by fight, or by surprize  
 To win the Mount of God, and on his Throne  
 To set the envier of his State, the proud  
 90 Aspirer, but thir thoughts prov'd fond and vain  
 In the mid way: though strange to us it seemd  
 At first, that Angel should with Angel warr,  
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
 So oft in Festivals of joy and love  
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire  
 Hymning th' Eternal Father: but the shout  
 Of Battel now began, and rushing sound  
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
 High in the midst exaltd as a God  
 100 Th' Apostat in his Sun-bright Chariot sate  
 Idol of Majestie Divine, ~~enclos'd~~  
 With Flaming Cherubim, and golden Shields;  
 Then lighted from his gorgeous Throne, for now  
 Twixt Host and Host but narrow space was left,  
 A dreadful interval, and Front to Front  
 Presented stood in terrible array  
 Of hideous length: before the cloudie Van,  
 On the rough edge of battel ere it joyn'd,  
*Satan* with vast and haughtie strides advanc't,  
 110 Came towring, armd in Adamant and Gold;

Abdiel that fight endur'd not, where he stood  
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest  
Should yet remain, where faith and realtie  
Remain not; wherfore should not strength & might  
There fail where Vertue fails, or weakest prove  
Where boldest; though to sight unconquerable?  
His puissance, trusting in th' Almighty's aide,  
I mean to try, whose Reason I have tri'd  
Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just,  
That he who in debate of Truth hath won,  
Should win in Arms, in both disputes alike  
Victor; though brutish that contest and foule,  
When Reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
Most reason is that Reason overcome.

120

So pondering, and from his armed Peers  
Forth stepping opposite, half way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more  
Incens't, and thus securely him defi'd.

130

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have  
The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd, (reacht  
The Throne of God unguarded, and his side  
Abandond at the terror of thy Power  
Or potent tongue; fool, not to think how vain  
Against th' Omnipotent to rise in Arms;  
Who out of smallest things could without end  
Have rais'd incessant Armies to defeat  
Tby folly; or with solitarie hand  
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow  
Unaided could have finisht thee, and whelmd  
Thy Legions under darknes; but thou seeft

140

All

All are not of thy Train ; there be who Faith  
Prefer, and Pietie to God, though thep  
To thee not visible, when I alone  
Seemd in thy World erroneous to dissent  
From all : my Sect thou seest, now learn too late  
How few somtimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance

150 Thus answerd. Ill for thee, but in wisht houre  
Of my revenge, first sought for thou returnst  
From flight, seditious Angel, to receave  
Thy merited reward, the first assay  
Of this right hand provo~~rt~~, since first that tongue  
Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose  
A third part of the Gods, in Synod met  
Thir Deities to assert, who while they feel  
Vigour Divine within them, can allow  
Omnipotence to none. But well thou const

160 Before thy fellows, ambitious to win  
From me som Plume, that thy success may show  
Destruction to the rest : this pause between  
(Unanswering least thou boast) to let thee know,  
At first I thought that Libertie and Heav'n  
To heav'nly Soules had bin all one ; but now  
I see that most through floth had rather serve,  
Ministring Spirits, traind up in Feast and Song ;  
Such hast thou arm'd, the Minstrelsie of Heav'n,  
Servilitie with freedom to contend,

170 As both thir deeds compar'd this day shall prove.  
To whom in brief thus *Abdiel* Stern repli'd.  
Apostat, still thou errst, nor end wilt find  
Of erring, from the path of truth remote :  
Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name

Of Servitude to serve whom God ordains,  
 Or Nature; God and Nature bid the same,  
 When he who rules is worthiest, and excells  
 Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
 To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
 Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,  
 Thy self not free, but to thy self enthrall'd ;  
 Yet leudly dar'st our ministring upbraid.  
 Reign thou in Hell thy Kingdom, let mee serve  
 In Heav'n God ever blessed, and his Divine  
 Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd,  
 Yet Chains in Hell, not Realms expect : mean while  
 From mee returnd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
 This greeting on thy impious Crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
 Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell  
 On the proud Crest of *Satan*, that no sight,  
 Nor motion of swift thought, less could his Shield  
 Such ruin intercept : ten paces huge  
 He back recoild ; the tenth on bended knee  
 His massie Spear upstaid ; as if on Earth  
 Winds under ground or waters forcing way  
 Sidelong, had push't a Mountain from his seat  
 Half sunk with all his Pines. Amazement seis'd  
 The Rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see  
 Thus foil'd thir mightiest, ours joy fill'd, and shout,  
 Presage of Victorie and fierce desire  
 Of Battel : whereat *Michael* bid sound  
 Th' Arch-angel trumpet ; through the vast of Heav'n  
 It sounded, and the faithful Armies rung  
*Hosanna* to the Highest : nor stood at gaze  
 The adverse Legions, nor less hideous joyn'd

180

190

200

The horrid shock: now storming furie rose,  
And clamour such as heard in Heav'n till now  
Was never, Arms on Armour clashing bray'd  
210 Horrible discord, and the madding Wheeles  
Of brazen Chariots rag'd; dire was the noise  
Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss  
Of fiery Darts in flaming volics flew,  
And flying vaulted either Host with fire.  
Sunder fierie Cope together rush'd  
Both Battels maine, with ruinous assault  
And inextinguishable rage; all Heav'n  
Resounded, and had Earth bin then, all Earth  
Had to her Center shook. What wonder? when  
220 Millions of fierce encountring Angels fought  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
These Elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all thir Regions: how much more of Power  
Armie against Armie numberless to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
Though not destroy, thir happy Native seat;  
Had not th' Eternal King Omnipotent  
From his strong hold of Heav'n high over-rul'd  
And limited thir might; though numberd such  
As each divided Legion might have seeind  
230 A numerous Host, in strength each armed hand  
A Legion; led in fight, yet Leader seemd  
Each Warriour single as in Chief, expert  
When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
Of Battel, open when, and when to close  
The ridges of grim Wars; no thought of flight,  
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
That angu'd fear; each on himself reli'd,

As onely in his arm the moment lay  
Of victorie ; deeds of eternal fame  
Were don, but infinite : for wide was spred  
That Warr and various ; somtimes on firm ground  
A standing fight, then soaring on main wing  
Tormented all the Air ; all Air seemd then  
Conflicting Fire : long time in eeven scale  
The Battel hung ; till *satan*, who that day  
Prodigious power had shewn, and met in Armes  
No equal, raunging through the dire attack  
Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
Saw where the Sword of *michael* sinote, and feild  
Squadrons at once, with huge two-handed sway  
Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came down  
Wide wasting ; such destruction to withstand  
He hasted, and oppos'd the rockie Orb  
Oftenfold Adamant, his ample Shield  
A vast circumference : At his approach  
The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toile  
Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end  
Intestine War in Heav'n, the arch foe subdu'd  
Or Captive drag'd in Chains, with hostile frown  
And visage all enflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnam'd in Heav'n, now plenteous, as thou seest  
These Acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest by just measure on thy self  
And thy adherents : how hast thou disturb'd  
Heav'n's blessed peace, and into Nature brought  
Miserie, uncreat'd till the crime  
Of thy Rebellion : how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright

240

250

260

270

## Book 6.

*Paradise lost.*

And faithful, now prov'd false. But think not here  
To trouble Holy Rest ; Heav'n casts thee out  
From all her Confines. Heav'n the seat of bliss  
Brooks not the works of violence and Warr.  
Hence then, and evil go with thee along  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,  
Thou and thy wicked crew ; there mingle broiles,  
Ere this avenging Sword begin thy doome,  
Or som more sudden vengeance wing'd from God  
280 Precipitate thee with augmented paine.

So spake the Prince of Angels ; to whom thus  
The Adversarie. Nor think thou with wind  
Of airie threats to aw whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turnd the least of these  
To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquisht, easier to transact with mee  
That thou shouldst hope, imperious, & with threats  
To chase me hence & erre not that so shall end  
The strife which thou call'st evil, but wee style  
290 The strife of Glorie : which we mean to win,  
Or turn this Heav'n it self into the Hell  
Thou fablest, here however to dwell free,  
If not to reign : mean while thy utmost force,  
And join him nam'd *Almighty* to thy aid,  
I flie not, but have sought thee farr and nigh.

They ended parle, and both addrest for fight  
Unspeakable ; for who, though with the tongue  
Of Angels, can relate, or to what things  
Likен on Earth conspicuous, that may lift  
300 Human imagination to such highth  
Of Godlike Power : for likest Gods they seemd,  
Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms

Fit

Fit to decide the Empire of great Heav'n.  
Now wav'd thir fierie Swords, and in the Aire  
Made horrid Circles; two broad Suns thir Shields  
Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood  
In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd  
Where erst was thickest fight, th' Angelic throng,  
And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
Of such commotion, such as to set forth  
Great things by small, If Natures concord broke,  
Among the Constellations warr were sprung,  
Two Planets rushing from aspect maligne  
Of fiercest opposition in mid Skie,  
Should combat, and thir jarring Sphears confound.  
Together both with next to Almighty Arme,  
Uplifted imminent one stroke they aim'd  
That might determine, and not need repeate,  
As not of power, at once; nor odds appeerd  
In might or swift prevention; but the sword  
Of *Michael* from the Armorie of God  
Was giv'n him temperd so, that neither keen  
Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
The sword of *Satan* with steep force to smite  
Descending, and in half cut sheere, nor staid,  
But with swift wheele reverse, deep entring shar'd  
All his right side; then *Satan* first knew pain,  
And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore  
The griding sword with discontinuous wound  
Pass'd through him, but th' Ethereal substance clos'd  
Not long divisible, and from the gash  
A stream of Nectarous humor issuing flow'd  
Sanguin, such as Celestial Spirits may bleed,  
And all his Armour stain'd ere while so bright.

310

320

330

Forth-

340

Forthwith on all sides to his aide was run  
By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd  
Defence; while others bore him on thir Shields  
Back to his Chariot; where it stood retir'd  
From off the files of warr; there they him laid  
Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame  
To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
Humbld' by such rebuke, so farr beneath  
His confidence to equal God in power.

350

Yet soon he heald; for Spirits that live throughout  
Vital in every part, not as frail man  
In Entrailes, Heart or Head, Liver or Reines,  
Cannot but by annihilating die;  
Nor in thir liquid texture mortal wound  
Receive, no more then can the fluid Aire:  
All Heart they live, all Head, all Eye, all Eare,  
All Intellect, all Sense, and as they please,  
They Limb themselves, and colour, shape or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

360

Mean while in other parts like deeds deservd  
Memorial, where the might of *Gabriel* fought,  
And with fierce Ensignes pierc'd the deep array  
Of *Moloc* furious King, who him desi'd,  
And at his Chariot wheeles to drag him bound  
Threatn'd, nor from the Holie One of Heav'n  
Refrein'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon  
Down clov'n to the waste, with shatterd Armes  
And uncouth paine fled bellowing. On each wing  
*Uriel* and *Raphael* his vaunting foe,  
Though huge, and in a Rock of Diamond Armd,  
Vanquish'd *Adramelecs*, and *Asmarlati*,  
Two potent Thrones, that to be less then Gods  
Disdain'd,

Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learnt in thir flight,  
Mangl'd with gasty wounds through Plate and  
Nor stood unmindful *Abdiel* to annoy (Maile:  
The Atheist crew, but with redoubl'd blow  
*Ariel* and *Ariee*, and the violence

370

Of *Ramiel* scorcht and blasted overthrew.

I might relate of thousands, and thir names  
Eternize here on Earth; but those elect  
Angels contented with thir fame in Heav'n  
Seek not the praise of men: the other sort  
In might though wondrous and in Acts of Warr,  
Nor of Renown less eager, yet by doome  
Canceld from Heav'n and sacred memorie,  
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.

380

For strength from Truth divided and from Just,  
Illaudable, naught merits but dispraise  
And ignominie, yet to glorie aspires  
Vain glorious, and through infamie seeks fame:  
Therfore Eternal silence be thir doome.

And now thir mightiest quell'd, the battell swerv'd,  
With many an inrode gor'd; deformed rout  
Enter'd, and foul disorder; all the ground  
With shiverd armour strow'n, and on a heap  
Chariot and Charioter lay overturn'd  
And fierie foaming Steeds; what stood, recoy'd  
Orewearied, through the faint Satanic Host  
Defensive searse, or with pale fear surpris'd,  
Then first with fear surpris'd and sense of paine  
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
By sinne of disobedience, till that hour  
Not liable to fear or flight or paine.  
Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints

390

In

400 In Cubic Phalanx firm advanc't entire,  
 Invulnerable, impenitrably arm'd :  
 Such high advantages thir innocence  
 Gave them above thir foes, not to have finnd,  
 Not to have disobei'd ; in fight they stood  
 Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd  
 Bywound, though from thir place by violence mov'd  
 Now Night her course began, and over Heav'n  
 Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
 And silence on the odious dinn of Warr :  
 Under her Cloudie covert both retir'd,  
 410 Victor and Vanquisht : on the foughten field  
 Michael and his Angels prevalent  
 Encamping, plac'd in Guard thir Watches round,  
 Cherubic waving fires : on th' other part  
 Satan with his rebellious disappeerd,  
 Far in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest,  
 His Potentates to Councel call'd by night ;  
 And in the midst thus undismai'd began.  
 O now in danger tri'd, now known in Armes  
 Not to be overpower'd, Companions deare,  
 420 Found worthy not of Libertie alone,  
 Too mean prense, but what we more affect,  
 Honour, Dominion, Glorie, and renowne,  
 Who have sustaind one day in doubtful fight,  
 (And if one day, why not Eternal dayes?)  
 What Heavens Lord had powerfullest to send  
 Against us from about his Throne, and judg'd  
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
 But proves not so : then fallible, it seems,  
 Off future we may deem him, though till now  
 430 Omniscent thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,

Some

Some disadvantage we endur'd and paine,  
 Till now not known, but known as soon contemnd,  
 Since now we find this our Empyreal forme  
 Incapable of mortal injurie  
 Imperishable, and though peirc'd with wound,  
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heald.  
 Of evil then so small as easie think  
 The remedie's perhaps more valid Armes,  
 Weapons more vident, when next we meet,  
 May serve to better us, and worle our foes,  
 Or equal what between us made the odds,  
 In Nature none: if other hidden cause  
 Left them Superior, while we can preserve  
 Unhurt our mindes, and understanding sound,  
 Due search and consultation will disclose.

440

He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood  
 Nisroc, of Principalities the prime;  
 As one he stood escapt from cruel fight,  
 Sore toild, his riv'n Armes to havoc hewn,  
 And cloudie in aspect thus answering Spake,  
 Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free  
 Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard  
 For Gods, and too unequal work we find  
 Against unequal armes to fight in paine,  
 Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil  
 Ruin must needs ensue; for what avales  
 Valour or strenght, though marchless, quell'd with  
 Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
 Of Mightiest. Sense of pleasure we may well  
 Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine  
 But live content, which is the calmest life:  
 But pain is perfect misery, the worst

450

460

Of evils, and excessive, overturnes  
 All patience. He who therefore can invent  
 With what more forcible, we may offend  
 Our yet unwounded Enemies, or arme  
 Our selves with like defence, to mee deserves  
 No lets then for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd *Satan* replid,  
 470 Not uninvented that, which thou aright  
 Beleivst so main to our success, I bring ;  
 Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
 Of this Ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
 This continent of spacious Heav'n, adorn'd  
 With Plant, Fruit, Flour Ambrofial, Gemms & Gold,  
 Whose Eye so superficially surveyes  
 These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
 Deep under ground, materials dark and crudi,  
 Of spiritous and fierie spume, till touche  
 480 With Heav'n's ray, and temper'd they shoot forth  
 So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light,  
 These in thir dark Nativitie the Deep  
 Shall yeild us, pregnant with infernal flame,  
 Which into hallow Engins long and round  
 Thick-rammd, at th other bore with touch of fire  
 Dilated and infuriate shall send forth  
 From far with thundring noile among our foes  
 Such implements of mischief as shall dash  
 To pieces, and o'rewhelm whatever stands  
 490 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarmed  
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolts,  
 Nor long shall be our labour, yet ere dawne,  
 Effect shall end our war. Mean while revives  
 Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel joind

Think

Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.  
He ended, and his words thir drooping cheare  
Enlightn'd, and thir languiish hope reviv'd.  
Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how hee  
To be th' inventer mis'd, so easie it seem'd  
Once found, which yet unsound thost would have 500  
Impossible: yet haply of thy Race (thought  
In futurè dayes, if Malice should abound,  
Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
With dev'lish machination might devise  
Like instrument to plague the Sons of men  
For sin, or warr and mutual slaughter bent,  
Forthwith from Council to the work they flew,  
None arguing stood, innumerable hands  
Were ready, in a moment up they turnd  
Wide the Celestiall folie, and saw beneath  
Th' originals of Nature in thir crude 510  
Conception; Sulphurous and Nitrous Foame  
They found, they mingl'd, and with futtle Art,  
Concocted and aduised they reduc'd  
To blackest grain, and into store conveyd.  
Part hidd'n veins diggd up (nor hath this Earth  
Entrails unlike) of Mineral and Stone,  
Whereof to found thir Engins and thir Balls  
Of missive ruin; part incentive reed  
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.  
So all ere day-spring, under conscious Night  
Secret they finis'h'd, and in order set,  
With silent circumspection unespied.  
Now when fair Mons Orient in Heav'n appeerd  
Up rose the Victor Angels, and to Arms  
The matin Trumpet Sung: in Arms they stood

Of Golden Panoplie, resplendent Host  
 Soon banded ; others from the dawning Hills  
 Look'd round, and Scouts each Coast light-armed,  
 530 Each quarter, to descrie the distant foe. (coure,  
 Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
 In motion or in alt ; him soon they met  
 Under spred Ensignes moving high, in flow  
 But firm Battalion ; back with speediest Sail  
 Zaphiel, of Cherubim the Swiftest wing,  
 Came flying, and in mid Aire aloud thus cri'd.  
 Arme, Warriours, Anne for fight, the foe at hand,  
 Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit.  
 This day, fear not his flight ; so thick a Cloud  
 540 He comes, and settl'd in his face I see  
 Sad resolution and leuure ; let each  
 His Adamantine coat gird well, and each  
 Fit well his Helme, gripe fast his orb'd Shield,  
 Born eeyn or high, for this day will pour down,  
 If I conjecture aught, no drizzling showr,  
 But rattling storm of Arrows barbd with fire.  
 So warnd he them aware themselves, and soon  
 In order, quit of all impediment,  
 Instant without disturb they took Allarm,  
 550 And onward move Embattell'd ; when behold  
 Not distant far with heavie pace the Foe  
 Approaching gross and huge ; in hollow Cube  
 Training his devillish Enginrie, impal'd  
 On every side with shadowing Squadrons Deep,  
 To hide the fraud. At interview both stood  
 A while, but suddenly at head appear'd  
 Satan : And thus was heard Commanding loud,  
 Vangard, to Right and Left the Front unsould  
 That

That all may see who hate us, how we seek  
Peace and composure, and with open breast  
Stand readie to receive them, if they like 560  
Our overture, and turn not back perverse ;  
But that I doubt, however witness Heaven,  
Heav'n witness thou abn, while we discharge  
Freely our part : yee who appointed stand  
Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
What we propound, and loud that all may hear.

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
Had ended ; when to Right and Left the Front  
Divided, and to either Flank retir'd. 570  
Which to our eyes discoverd new and strange,  
A triple-mounted row of Pillars laid  
On Wheels (for like to Pillars most they seem'd  
Or hollow'd bodies made of Oak or Firr  
With branches lopt, in Wood or Mountain fell'd)  
Brass, Iron, Stonie mould, had not thir mouthes  
With hideous orifice gap't on us wide,  
Portending hollow truce ; at each behind  
A Seraph stood, and in his hand a Reed  
Stood waving tipt with fire ; while we suspense,  
Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd,  
Not long, for sudden all at once thir Reeds. 580  
Put forth, and to a narrow vent appli'd  
With nicest touch, Immediate in a flame,  
But soon obscur'd with smoak, all Heav'n appear'd  
From those deep-throated Engins belcht, whose  
Emboweld with outragious noise the Air, (roar  
And all her entrails gore, disgorging foul  
Thir devillish glut, chaind Thunderbolts and Hail  
Of Iron Globes, which on the Victor Host 590

Level'd, with such impetuous furie smote,  
That whom they hit, none on thir feet might stand,  
Though standing else as Rocks, but down they fell  
By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel rowl'd ;  
The sooner for thir Arms, unarm'd they might  
Have easily as Spirits evaded swift  
By quick contraction or remove ; but now  
Foule dissipation follow'd and forc't rout ;  
Nor serv'd it to relax thir ferried files.

600 What should they do ? if on they rush, repulse  
Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
Doubl'd, would render them yet more despis'd,  
And to thir foes a laughter ; for in view  
Stood rankt of Seraphim another row  
In posture to displode thir second tire  
Of Thunder : back defeated to return  
They worse abhor'd. *Satan* beheld thir plight,  
And to his Mates thus in derision call'd.

610 O Friends, why come not on these Victors proud ?  
Ere while they fierce were coming, and when wee,  
To entertain them fair with open Front (terms  
And Breſt, (what could we more ?) propounded  
Of composition, strait they chang'd thir minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance, yet for a dance they seem'd  
Somewhat extravagant and wilde, perhaps  
For joy of offerd peace : but I suppose  
If our proposals once again were heard  
We should compel them to a quick result.

620 To whom thus *Bela* in like gamesom mood,  
Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home,  
Such

Such as we might perceive amus'd them all,  
And stumbl'd many, who receives them right,  
Had need from head to foot well understand;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They shew us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant veine  
Stood scoffing, hightn'd in thir thoughts beyond  
All doubt of Victorie, eternal might

630

To match with thir inventions they presum'd  
So easie, and of his Thunder made a scorn,  
And all his Host derided, while they stood  
A while in trouble; but they stood not long,  
Rage prompted them at length, & found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.

Forthwith ( behold the excellence, the power  
Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd )  
Thir Arms away they threw, and to the Hills  
( For Earth hath this variety from Heav'n  
Of pleasure situate in Hill and Dale )

640

Light as the Lightning glimpts they ran, they flew,  
From thir foundations loosing to and fro  
They pluckt the seated Hills with all thir load,  
Rocks, Waters, Woods, and by the shaggie tops  
Up lifting bore them in thir hands: Amaze,  
Be sure, and terrour seis'd the rebel Host,  
When coming towards them so dread they saw  
The bottom of the Mountains upward turn'd,  
Till on those cursed Engins triple-row  
They saw them whelmd, and all thir confidence  
Under the weight of Mountains buried deep,  
Themselves invaded next, and on thir heads  
Main Promontories slung, which in the Air

650

Came

660

Came shadowing, and opprest whole Legions arm'd,  
 Thir armor help'd thir harm, crush't in and brus'd  
 Into thir substance pent, which wrought them pain  
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,  
 Long strugling underneath, ere they could wind  
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,  
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.

670

The rest in imitation to like Armes  
 Betook them, and the neighbouring Hills upto're;  
 So Hills amid the Air encounter'd Hills  
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,  
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade;  
 Infernal noise; Warr seem'd a civil Game  
 To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt  
 Upon confusion rose: and now all Heav'n  
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspred,  
 Had not th' Almighty Father where he sits  
 Shrin'd in his Sanctuarie of Heav'n secure,  
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
 This tumult, and permittid all, advis'd:  
 That his great purpose he might so fulfill,  
 To honour his Anointed Son aveng'd  
 Upon his enemies, and to declare  
 All power on him transferr'd: whence to his Son  
 Th' Assessor of his Throne he thus began.

680

Effulgence of my Glorie, Son belov'd,  
 Son in whose face invisible is beheld  
 Visibly, what by Deitie I am,  
 And in whose hand what by Decree I do,  
 Second Omnipotence, two dayes are past,  
 Two dayes, as we compute the dayes of Heav'n,  
 Since Michael and his Powers went forth to tame

These

## Paradise lost.

## Book 6.

These disobedient; sore hath been thir <sup>neglect</sup> H  
 As likelest was, when two such Foes met arm'd 32013  
 For to themselves I left them, and thou knowst, d  
 Equal in their Creation they were form'd, d bba  
 Save what <sup>sin</sup> hath impaired, which yet hath wrought  
 Infensibly, for I suspend thir doom; d pif jif  
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
 Endless, and no solution will be found: d mda  
 Warr wearied hath perform'd what Warr can do,  
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reines, (makes  
 With Mountains as with Weapons arm'd, which  
 Wild work in Heav'n, and dangerous to the maine.  
 Two dayes are therefore past, the third is thine; 1  
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700  
 Have suffer'd, that the Glorie may be thine vs to 101  
 Of ending this great Warr, since none but Thou  
 Can end it. Into thee such Virtue and Grace  
 Immense I have transfus'd, that all may know  
 In Heav'n and Hell thy Power above compare,  
 And this perverse Commotio governed thus, 107  
 To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir <sup>articles of</sup> T  
 Of all things, to be Heir and to be King <sup>of all</sup> T  
 By Sacred Unction, thy deserved right. 113  
 Go then thou Mightiest in thy Fathers might, 117  
 Ascend my Charter, guide the rapid Wheeles <sup>the</sup> T  
 That shake Heav'n's basis, bring forth all my Warr,  
 My Bow, and Thunder, my Alarum, my Arms <sup>my</sup> H  
 Gird on, and Sword upon thy puissant Thigh; 123  
 Pursue these sons of Darknes, drive them out  
 From all Heav'n's boudries into the utter Deep; <sup>the</sup> A  
 There let them learn, as like them to despise, D  
 God and <sup>the</sup> Messiah his anointed King. 131 T  
 250 The Conflict of  
 He

He said, and with his Son with Rayers directed  
 720 Shon full; he all his Father full exprest  
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd, visitment of 103  
 And thus the filial Godhead answering spake up<sup>d</sup>  
 O Father, O Supreme of the avyly Thrones, 108  
 First, Highestly Gloriey Best, thou alwayes fearest  
 To glorie thy Son, I alwayes theg, 113  
 As is most just; this I my Glorie account,  
 My exaltation, and my whole delight, 118  
 That thou in me well pleased, doest thy will  
 Fulfill'd, which no fath is all my bliss. 123  
 730 Scepter and Power, thy giving, I assume, 128  
 And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
 Thou shall be All in All; and I in thee 133  
 For ever, and in me all whom thou lovest 138  
 But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can parton 143  
 Thy rethys, as I put thy mildness by, 148  
 Image of thee in all things; and shall soon, 153  
 Armd with thy might, rid heavn of these rebell'd,  
 To this prepar'd all Mansion driven 158  
 To chains of Darkness, and thy undying Worm,  
 740 That from thy just obediente should revolt, 163  
 Whom to obey is happiness entire, 168  
 Then shall thy Saints unmixt, and from th' impure  
 Farr separate, circling thy holy Mound, 173  
 Unfauln Halleluia, who thee sing, 178  
 Hymns of high praise, and I among th' chief, 183  
 So said, he o're his Scepter bowing, 188  
 From the right hand of Glorie where he sat, 193  
 And the third sacred Morn began to shide, 198  
 Dawning through Heav'ns foret plash'd with whid.  
 750 The Chariot of Paternal Deitie, 203  
 (whid sound  
 Flashing

Flashing thick flames, Wheate within Wheate une  
 It selfe infinct with Spirit, but conveyd  
 By four Cherubic shapes, four Faces each  
 Had wondrous, as with Starrs thir bodies all  
 And Wings were set with Eyes, with Eyes the  
 Of Beril, and careering Fires between; (Wheels  
 Over thir heads a crystal Firmament,  
 Whereon a Saphir Throne, inlaid with pure  
 Amber, and colours of the showrie Arch.  
 Hee in Celestial Panoplie all armd  
 Of radiant *Urim*, work divinely wrought,  
 Ascended, at his right hand Victorie  
 Sate Eagle-wing'd, beside him hung his Bow  
 And Quiver with three-bolted Thunder stor'd,  
 And from about him fierce Effusion rowld  
 Of smoak and bickering flame, and sparkles dire;  
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,  
 He onward came, farr off his coming shon,  
 And twentie thousand (I thir number heard)  
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen :  
 Hee on the wings of Cherub rode sublime  
 On the Crystallin Skie, in Saphir Thron'd,  
 Illustrious farr and wide, but by his own  
 First seen, them unexpected joy surpris'd,  
 When the great Ensign of *Messiah* blaz'd  
 Aloft by Angels born, his Sign in Heav'n :  
 Under whose Conduct *Michael* soon reduc'd  
 His Armie, circumfus'd on either Wing,  
 Under thir Head imbodyed all in one.  
 Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd;  
 At his command the uprooted Hills retir'd  
 Each to his place, they heard his voice and went

760

770

780

Obsequious; Heav'n his wonted face renew'd,  
And with fresh Florets Hill and Valley smil'd.  
This saw his hapless Foes, but stood obdur'd,  
And to rebellious fight rallied thir Powers  
Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.

In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?  
But to convince the proud what Signs availe,

790 Or Wonders move thi' obdurate to relent?  
They hard'nd more by what might most reclame,  
Grieving to see his Glorie, at the sight  
Took envie, and aspiring to his highth,  
Stood reimbattell'd fierce, by force or fraud  
Weening to prosper, and at length prevaile  
Against God and *Messiah*, or to fall  
In universal ruin last, and now  
To final Battel drew, disdaining flight,  
Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God  
800 To all his Host on either hand thus spake.

Stand still in bright array ye Saints, here stand  
Ye Angels arm'd, this day from Battel rest;  
Faithful hath been your Warfare, and of God  
Accepted, fearless in his righteous Cause,  
And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye don  
Invincibly; but of this cursed crew  
The punishment to other hand belongs,  
Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints;  
Number to this dayes work is not ordain'd  
Nor multirude, stand onely and behold  
Gods indignation on these Godles斯 pourd  
By mee; not you but mee they have despis'd,  
Yet envied; against mee is all thir rage,  
Because the Father, t' whom in Heav'n supream

Kingdom

Kingdom and Power and Glorie appertains,  
Hath honourd me according to his will.  
Therefore to mee thir doom he hath assig'n'd ;  
That they may have thir wish, to trie with mee  
In Battel which the stronger proves, they all,  
Or I alone against them, since by strength  
They measure all, of other excellency  
Not emulous, nor care who them excells ;  
Nor other strife with them do I voutsafe.

820

So spake the Son, and into terrour chang'd  
His count'nce too severe to be beheld  
And full of wrauth bent on his Enemies.  
At once the Four spred out thir Starrie wings  
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the Orbes  
Of his fierce Chariot rowld, as with the sound  
Of torrent Floods, or of a numerous Host.  
Hee on his impious Foes right onward drove,  
Gloomie as Night ; under his burning Wheeles  
The stedfast Empyrean shook throughout,  
All but the Throne it self of God. Full soon  
Among them he arriv'd ; in his right hand  
Grasp'ng ten thousand Thunders, which he sent  
Before him, such as in thir Soules infix'd  
Plagues ; they astonisht all resistance lost,  
All courage ; down thir idle weapons drop'd ;  
O're Shields and Helmes, and helmed heads he rode  
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
That wish'd the Mountains now might be again  
Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.  
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
His arrows, from the fourfold wisag'd Foure,

830

840

Distinct

Distinct with eyes, and from the living Wheels,  
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes,

One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye  
Glat'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire

850 Among th' accurst, that witherd all thir strength,  
And of thir wonted vigour left them drain'd,  
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd  
His Thunder in mid Volie, for he meant  
Not to destroy, but root them out of Heav'n :  
The overthrown he rais'd, and as a Heard

Of Goats or timerous flock together throng'd  
Drove them before him Thunder-struck, pursu'd  
With terrors and with furies to the bounds

860 And Chrystall wall of Heav'n, which op'ning wide,  
Rowld inward, and a spacious Gap disclos'd  
Into the wastful Deep ; the monstrous sight  
Strook them with horror backward, but far worse  
Urg'd them behind ; headlong themselvs they threw  
Down from the verge of Heav'n, Eternal wrauth  
Burnt after them to the bottomles pit.

Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, Hell saw  
Heav'n ruining from Heav'n and would have fled

Affrighted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound.

870 Nine dayes they fell ; confounded *chaos* roard,  
And felt tenfold confusion in thir fall  
Through his wilde Anarchie, so huge a rout  
Incumberd him with ruin : Hell at last  
Yawning receavd them whole, and on them clos'd,  
Hell thir fit habitation fraught with fire

Unquench-

Unquenchable, the house of woe and paine.  
 Disburd'nd Heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd  
 Her mural breach, returning whence it rowld.  
 Sole Victor from th' expulsion of his Foes  
 Messias his triumphal Chariot turn'd:  
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood  
 Eye witnesses of his Almighty Acts,  
 With Jubilie advanc'd; and as they went,  
 Shaded with branching Palme, each order bright,  
 Sung Triumph, and him sung Victorious King,  
 Son, Heire, and Lord, to him Dominion giv'n,  
 Worthiest to Reign: he celebrated rode  
 Triumphant through mid Heav'n, into the Courts  
 And Temple of his mightie Father Thron'd  
 On high; who into Glorie him receav'd,  
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

380

395

400

Thus measuring things in Heav'n by things on  
 At thy request, and that thou maist beware (Earth  
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd  
 What might have else to human Race bin hid;  
 The discord which befel, and Warr in Heav'n  
 Among th' Angelic Powers, and the deep fall  
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd  
 With Satan, hee who envies now thy state,  
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
 Thee also from obedience, that with him  
 Bereavd of happiness thou maist partake  
 His punishment, Eternal miserie;  
 Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
 As a Despaide on against the most High,  
 Thee once to gaine Companion of his woe.

But

910 But lift'n not to his Temptations, warne  
Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard  
By terrible Example the reward  
Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,  
Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgres.

book in all now signed and the 1000 copies of the Indiana State Bilingual will be ready for distribution in about a week. The original Indiana State Bilingual will be off press and has already gone to the printer in Indianapolis. It is still early to say how many copies will be printed, but it will be at least 1000 copies.

The End of the Sixth Book.

## PARA-

anob lobius p. 22. l. 2. d. 2. e. 2. f. 2. g. 2. h. 2. i. 2. j. 2. k. 2. l. 2. m. 2. n. 2. o. 2. p. 2. q. 2. r. 2. s. 2. t. 2. u. 2. v. 2. w. 2. x. 2. y. 2. z. 2.

PARADISE  
LOST.

BOOK VII.



Ascend from Heav'n! *Urania*, by  
that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose  
Voice divine  
Following, above th' *Olympian*  
Hill I soard,

Above the flight of *Regal* wing.  
The meaning, not the Name I call; for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old *Olympus* dwelt'st, but Heav'nly borne,  
Before the Hills appeerd; or Fountain flow'd,  
Thou with Eternal wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy Sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of th' Almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy Celestial Song. Up led by thee  
Into the Heav'n of Heav'ns I have presum'd,  
An Earthly Guest, and drawn Emp'reat Aire,

Thy tempring; with like safetie guided down  
Return me to my Native Element; s  
Least from this flying Steed unrein'd, (as once  
*Bellerophon*, though from a lower Clime)

Dismounted, on th' *Aleian* Field I fall

20 Erroneous there to wander and forlorne.

Half yet remaines unlung, but narrower bound  
Within the visible Diurnal Spheare;  
Standing on Earth, nor sapt above the Pole,  
More safe I Sing with mortal voice, unchang'd  
To hoarce or mute, though fall'n on evil dayes,  
On evil dayes though fall'n, and evil tongues;  
In darknes, and with dangers compast rouud,  
And solitude; yet not alone, while thou

Visit'st my slumbers Nightly, or when Morn

30 Purples the East: still governeth my Song,

*Urania*, and fit audience find, thought few.

But drive farr off the barbarous dissonance

Of *Bacchus* and his Revellers, the Race

Of that wilde Rout that tore the *Thracian* Bard  
In *Rhodope*, where Woods and Rocks had Eares

To rapture, till the savage clamor dround

Both Harp and Voice; nor could the Muse defend

Her Son. So fail not thou, who thee implores:

For thou art Heav'lie, shee an empty dreane.

40 Say God deſs, what ensu'd when *Raphael*,

The affable Arch-angel, had forewarn'd

*Adam* by dire example to beware

Apostacie, by what befell in Heaven

To those Apostates, least the like befall

In Paradise to *Adam* or his Race,

Charg'd not to touch the interdicted Tree;

If they transgresse; and slight that sole command,  
 So easily obeyd amid the choice  
 Of all taste else to please this appetite,  
 Though wandring. He with his consoled *Eve*  
 The storie heard attentive, and was fill'd  
 With admiration, and deep Muse to heare  
 Of things so high and strange; things to thir thought  
 So unimaginable as hate in Heav'n;  
 And Warre so neare the Peace of God in bliss  
 With such confusion: but the evil soon  
 Driv'n back redounded as a flood on those  
 From whom it sprung; impossible to mix  
 With Blesedness. Whence *Adam* soon repeal'd  
 The doubts that in his heart arose: and now  
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
 What neerer might concern him, how this World  
 Of Heav'n and Earth conspicuous first began,  
 When, and whereof created, for what cause,  
 What within *Eden* or without was done  
 Before his memorie, as one whose drouth  
 Yet scarce allay'd still ey'd the current streme,  
 Whose liquid manur heurd new thirst excites,  
 Proceeded thusto ask his Heav'ly Guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our eares,  
 Farr differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd  
 Divine Interpreter, by favour sent  
 Down from the Empyrean to forewarne  
 Us timely of what might else have bin our loss,  
 Unknown, which humah knowledg could not reach:  
 For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
 Receave with solemne purpose to observe

50

60

70

80     Immutably his sovran will, the end  
   Of what we are. But since thou hast voutsaf't  
   Gently for our instruction to impart  
   Things above Earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
   Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seced'd,  
   Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
   What may no less perhaps avialle us known,  
   How first began this Heav'n which we behold.  
   Distant so high, with moving Fires adorn'd  
   Innumerable, and this which yeelds or fills.  
90     All space, the ambientt Aire wide interfus'd  
   Imbracing round this florid Earth, what cause  
   Mov'd the Creator in his holy Rest  
   Through all Eternitie so late to build  
   In *Chaos*, and the work begun, how soon  
   Absolv'd, if unforbid thou maist unsould  
   What wee, not to explore the secrets aske  
   Of his Eternal Empire, but the more  
   To magnifie his works, the more we know.  
   And the great Light of Day yet wants to run.  
100    Much of his Race though sleep, suspens in Heav'n  
   Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he heares,  
   And longer will delay to heare thee tell  
   His Generation, and the rising Birth  
   Of Nature, from the unapparent Deep :  
   Or if the Starr of Eevning and the Moon,  
   Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring  
   Silence, and Sleep listning to thee will watch,  
   Or we can bid his absence, till thy Song  
   End, and dismiss thee ere the Morning shine.  
   Thus *Adam* his illustrious Guest besought  
   And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd milde.

This

This also thy request with caution askt  
Obtaine : though to recount Almightye works  
What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?  
Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
To glorifie the Maker, and inferr  
Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
Thy hearing, such Commission from above  
I have receav'd, to answer thy desire  
Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain  
To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope  
Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,  
Onely Omniscent, hath supprest in Night,  
To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :  
Anough is left besides to search and know.  
But Knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her Temperance over Appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain,  
Oppresses else with Surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to Folly, as Nourishment to Winde.

120

130

Know then, that after Lucifer from Heav'n  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the Host  
Of Angels, then that Starr the Starrs among)  
Fell with his flaming Legions through the Deep  
Into his place, and the great Son returnd  
Victorius with his Saints, th' Omnipotent  
Eternal Father from his Throne beheld  
Thir multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid  
This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
Of Deitie suprem, us dispossess,

140

He

He trusted to have seis'd, and into fraud  
Drew many, whom thir place know'st here no more,  
Yet farr the greater part have kept, I see,  
Thir st<sup>t</sup>ation, Heav'n yet populous retaines  
Number sufficient to posses her Realmes  
Though wide, and this high Temple to frequent  
With Ministeries due and solemn Rites:

150 But least his heart exalt him in the barme  
Already done, to have dispeopl'd Heav'n,  
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repaire  
That detriment, if such it be to lose  
Self-lost, and in a moment will create  
Another World, out of one man a Race  
Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
Not here, till by degrees of merit rais'd  
They open to themselves at length the way  
Up hither, under long obedience tri'd,

160 And Earth be chang'd to Heavn, & Heav'n to Earth,  
One Kingdom, Joy and Union without end.  
Mean while inhabit laxe, ye Powers of Heav'n,  
And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
This I perform, speak thou, and be it don:  
My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee  
I send along, ride forth, and bid the Deep  
Within appointed bounds be Heav'n and Earth,  
Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill  
Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.

170 Though I uncircumscrib'd my self retire,  
And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
To act or not, Necesitie and Chance  
Approach not mee, and what I will is Fate.  
So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake

Paradise Lost. Book 7.

His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
Immediate are the Acts of God, more swift  
Then time or motion, but to human ears  
Cannot without procel of speech be told,  
So told as earthly notion can receive.

180

Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heav'n  
When such was heard declar'd the Alunightie's will;  
Glorie they sung to the most High, good will  
To future men, and in thir dwellings peace :  
Glorie to him whose just avenging ire  
Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight  
And th' habitations of the just; to him  
Glorie and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd  
Good out of evil to create, in stead  
Of Spirits maligne a better Race to bring  
Into thir vacant room, and thence diffuse  
His good to Worlds and Ages infinite.  
So sang the Hierarchies : Mean while the Son  
On his great Expedition now appear'd,  
Girt with Omnipotence, with Radiance crown'd  
Of Majestie Divine, Sapience and Love  
Immense, and all his Father in him shon.  
About his Chariot numberless were pour'd  
Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,  
And Vertues, winged Spirits, and Chariots wing'd,  
From the Armoury of God, where stand of old  
Myriads between two brazen Mountains lodg'd  
Against a soleinn day, harness't at hand,  
Celestial Equipage; and now came forth  
Spontaneous, for within them Spirit livd,  
Attendant on thir Lord : Heav'n op'nd wide  
Her ever during Gates, Harmonious found

190

200

On

On golden Hinges moving, to let forth  
The King of Glorie in his powerful Word  
And Spirit coming to create new Worlds.

210 On heav'ly ground they stood, and from the shore  
They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss  
Outraggous as a Sea, dark, wasteful, wilde,  
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious windes  
And surging waves, as Mountains to assault  
Heav'ns highth, and with the Center mix the Pole.

Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou Deep, peace,  
Said then th' Omnipic Word, your discord end :

Nor staid, but on the Wings of Cherubim  
Uplifted, in Paternal Glorie rode

220 Farr into *Chaos*, and the World unborn ;  
For *Chaos* heard his voice : him all his Traine  
Follow'd in bright procession to behold  
Creation, and the wonders of his might.

Then staid the feryid Wheeles, and in his hand  
He took the golden Compasses, prepar'd  
In Gods Eternal store, to circumscribe  
This Universe, and all created things :

One foot be center'd, and the other turn'd  
Round through the vast profunditie obscure,

230 And said, thus farr extend, thus farr thy bounds,  
This be thy just Circumfexence, O World.

Thus God the Heav'n created, thus the Earth,  
Matter uniform'd and void : Darkness profound

Cover'd th' Abyss : but on the watric calme  
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspred,

And vital vertue infus'd, and vital warmth  
Throughout the fluid Mass, but downward purg'd

The black tartareous cold infernal dregs

Adverse to life : then founded, then conglob'd  
Like things to like, the rest to several place  
Disparted, and between spun out the Air,  
And Earth self-ballanc't on her Center hung.

Let ther be Light, said God; and forthwith Light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure  
Sprung from the Deep, and from her Native East  
To journaie through the airie gloom began,  
Sphear'd in a radiant Cloud, for yet the Sun  
Was not ; shee in a cloudie Tabernacle  
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the Light was good,  
And light from darkness by the Hemisphere  
Divided : Light the Day, and Darkness Night  
He nam'd. Thus was the first Day Eev'n and Morn:  
Nor past uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the Celestial Quires, when Orient Light  
Exhaling first from Darkness they beheld ;  
Birth-day of Heav'n and Earth ; with joy and shout  
The hollow Universal Orb they fill'd,  
And touch't thir Golden Harps, & hymning prais'd  
God and his works, Creatour him they sung,  
Both when first Eevning was, and when first Morn.

Again, God said, let ther be Firmament  
Amid the Waters, and let it divide  
The Waters from the Waters : and God made  
The Firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, Elemental Air, diffus'd  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great Round : partition firm and sure,  
The Waters underneath from those above  
Dividing : for as Earth, so hee the World  
Built on circumfluous Waters calme, in wide

A a Crystal.

240

250

260

270

Book 7. *Paradise lost.*

Crystallin Ocean, and the loud misrule  
Of *chaos*, farr remov'd, least fierce extreames  
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:  
And Heav'n he nam'd the Firmament: So Eev'n  
And Morning *Chorus* sung the second Day.

The Earth was form'd, but in the Womb as yet  
Of Waters, Embryon immature involv'd,  
Appeir'd not: over all the face of Earth  
Main Ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warme  
280 Prolific humour soft'ning all her Globe,  
Fermented the great Mother to conceive,  
Satiate with genial moisture, when God said  
Be gather'd now ye Waters under Heav'n  
Into one place, and let dry Land appear.  
Immediately the Mountains huge appear  
Emergent, and this broad bare backs upheave  
Into the Clouds, thir tops ascend the Skie:  
So high as heav'd the tumid Hills, so low  
Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,  
290 Capacious bed of Water: thither they  
Hasted with glad precipitance, uprowld  
As drops on dust conglobing from the drie;  
Part rise in crystal Wall, or ridge direct,  
For hastes; such slight the great command impress'd  
On the swift clouds: as Armies at the call  
Of Trumpet (for of Armies thou hast heard)  
Troop to thir Standard, so the wat'rie throng;  
Wave rowling after Wave, where way they found,  
If steep, with torrent rapture, if through Plaine,  
300 Soft-ebbing; nor withstand them Rock or Hill,  
But they, or under-ground, or circuit wide  
With Serpent errour wandring, found thir way,  
And

And on the wathie Oose deep Channels wore ;  
Easie, e're God had bid the ground be drie,  
All but within those banks, where Rivers now  
Stream, and perpetual draw thir humid traine.  
The dry Land, Earth, and the great receptacle  
Of congregated Waters he call'd Seas :  
And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' Earth  
Put forth the verdant Grass, Herb yeilding Seed,  
And Fruit Tree yeilding Fruit after her kind ;  
Whose Seed is in her self upon the Earth. 310

He scarce had said, when the bare Earth, till then  
Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
Brought forth the tender Grass, whose verdure clad  
Her Universal Face with pleasant green,  
Then Herbs of every leaf, that sudden flour'd  
Op'ning thir various colours, and made gay  
Her bolom smelling sweet: and these scarce blown,  
Forth flourish't thick the clustering Vine, forth crept  
The smelling Gourd, up stood the cornie Reed  
Embattell'd in her field : add the humble Shrub,  
And Bush with frizl'd hair implicit : last  
Rose as in Dance the stately Trees, and spred  
Thir branches hung with copious Fruit; or gemm'd  
Thir Blossoms : with high Woods the Hills were  
With tufts the vallies & each fountain side, (crownd,  
With borders long the Rivers. That Earth now  
Seemd like to Heav'n, a seat where Gods might  
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt (dwell,  
Her sacred shades : though God had yet not rain'd  
Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground  
None was, but from the Earth a dewie Mist  
Went up and waterd all the ground, and each

320

330

Plant of the field, which e're it was in the Earth  
 God made, and every Herb, before it grew  
 On the green stemm; God saw that it was good :  
 So Eev'n and Morn recorded the Third Day.

Again th' Almighty spake : Let there be Lights  
 340 High in th' expanse of Heaven to divide  
 The Day from Night ; and let them be for Signes,  
 For Seasons, and for Dayes, and circling Years,  
 And let them be for Lights as I ordaine  
 Thir Office in the Firmament of Heav'n  
 To give Light on the Earth ; and it was so.  
 And God made two great Lights, great for thir use  
 To Man, the greater to have rule by Day,  
 The less by Night alterne : and made the Starrs,  
 And set them in the Firmament of Heav'n  
 350 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the Day  
 In thir vicissitude, and rule the Night,  
 And Light from Darkness to divide. God saw,  
 Surveying his great Work, that it was good :  
 For of Celestial Bodies first the Sun  
 A mightie Spheare he fram'd, unlightsom first,  
 Though of Ethereal Mould: then form'd the Moon  
 Globose, and everie magnitude of Starrs,  
 And sowd with Starrs the Heav'n thick as a field :  
 Of Light by farr the greater part he took,  
 360 Transplanted from her cloudie Shrine, and plac'd  
 In the Suns Orb, made porous to receive  
 And drink the liquid Light, firm to retaine  
 Her gather'd beams, great Palace now of Light.  
 Hither as to thir Fountain other Starrs  
 Repairing, in thir gold'n Urns draw Light,  
 And hence the Morning Planet guilds his horns;

By tincture or reflection they augment

Thir small peculiar, though from human sight  
So farre remote, with diuinition seen.

First in his East the glorious Lamp was seen, 370

Regent of Day, and all th' Horizon round

Invested with bright Rayes, jocond to run

His Longitude through Heav'ns high rode: the gray

Dawn, and the *Pleiades* before him danc'd

Shedding sweet influence: less bright the Moon,

But opposite in leveld West was set

His mirror, with full face borrowing her Light

From him, for other light she needed none

In that aspect, and still that distance keepes

Till night, then in the East her turn she shines,

Revolvd on Heav'ns great Axle, and her Reign

With thousand lesser Lights dividual holds,

With thousand thousand Starres, that then appeir'd

Spangling the Hemisphere: then first adorad

With thir bright Luminaries that Set and Rose,

Glad Eevning & gladMorn crownd the fourth day.

And God said; let the Waters generate

Reptil with Spawn abundant, living Soule:

And let Fowle flie above the Earth, with wings

Displayd on the op'n Firmament of Heav'no.

And God created the great Whales, and each

Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously

The waters generated by thir kindes,

And every Bird of wing after his kinde;

And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,

Be fruitful, multiply, and in the Seas

And Lakes and running Streams the waters fill;

And let the Fowle be multiply'd on the Earth.

390

Forth-

400 Forthwith the Sounds and Seas, each Creek & Bay  
With Frie innumerable swarme, and Shoales  
Of Fish that with thir Finns and shining Scales  
Glide under the green Wave, in Sculles that oft  
Bank the mid Sea : part single or with mate  
Graze the Sea weed thir pasture, & through Groves  
Of Coral stray, or sporting with quick glance  
Show to the Sun thir wav'd coats dropt with Gold,  
Or in thir Pearlie shells at ease, attend  
Moist nutriment, or under Rocks thir food  
In jointed Armour watch : on smooth the Seale,  
410 And bended Dolphins play : part huge of bulk  
Wallowing unweldie, enormous in thir Gate  
Tempest the Ocean : there Leviathan  
Hugest of living Creatures, on the Deep  
Stretcht like a Promontorie sleepes or swinnes,  
And seems a moving Land, and at his Gilles  
Draws in, and at his Trunck spouts out a Sea.  
Mean while the tepid Caves, and Fens and shoares  
420 Thir Brood as numerous hatch, from the Egg that  
Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclos'd (soon  
Thir callow young, but featherd soon and fledge  
They summ'd thir Penns, and soaring th' air sublime  
With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud  
In prospect 3 there the Eagle and the Stork  
On Cliffs and Cedar tops thir Eyries build :  
Part loosly wing the Region, part more wise  
In common, rang'd in figure wedge thir way,  
Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
Thir Aerie Caravan high over Sea's  
430 Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing  
Easing thir flight; so stears the prudent Crane

Paradise lost. Book 7.

Her annual Voiage, born on Windes ; the Aire  
Floats, as they paſt, fann'd with unnumber'd plume :  
From Branch to Branch the ſmaller Birds with ſong  
Solac'd the Woods, and ſpred thir painted wings  
Till Ev'n, nor then the ſolemn Nightingal  
Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her ſoft layes :  
Others on Silver Lakes and Rivers Bath'd  
Thir downie Breſt ; the Swan with Arched neck  
Between her white wings mantling proudly, Rowes  
Her ſtate with Oarie feet : yet oft they quit  
The Dahk, and riſing on ſtiff Pennons, towre  
The mid. Aereal Skies : Others on ground  
Walk'd firm, the creſted Cock whose clarion ſounds  
The ſilent hours, and th' other whose gay Traine  
Adorns him, colour'd with the Florid hue  
Of Rainbows and Starrie Eyes. The Waters thus  
With Fiſh replenife, and the Aire with Fowle,  
Ev'ning and Mora ſolemniz'd the Fiſt day.

440

The Sixt, and of Creation laſt aroſe  
With Evening Harps and Mattin, when God ſaid,  
Let the Earth bring forth Fowle living in her kinde,  
Cattle and Creeping thing, and Beast of the Earth,  
Each in their kinde. The Earth obey'd, and ſtraiſt  
Op'ning her fertill Woomb teem'd at a Birth  
Innumerous living Creatures, perfect formes,  
Limb'd and full grown : out of the ground it roſe  
As from his haire the wilde Beast where he wonns  
In Forrest wilde, in Thicker, Brake, or Den ;  
Among the Trees in Pairs they roſe, they walk'd :  
The Cartel in the Fields and Meddowes green :  
Those rare and ſolitariē, thofe in flocks  
Paſturing at once, and in broad Herds upſprung.

450

460

The

The graffie Clouds now Calv'd; now half appeir'd  
The Tawnie Lion, pawing to get free  
His hinder parts, then springs as broke from Bonds,  
And Rampant shakes his Brinded main; the Ounce,  
The Libbard, and the Tyger, as the Moale  
Rising, the crumbl'd Earth above them threw  
In Hillocks; the swift Stag from under ground  
470 Bore up his branching head: scarce from his mould  
*Bebemot* biggest born of Earth upheav'd  
His vastness: Fleec't the Flocks and bleating rose,  
As Plants: ambiguous between Sea and Land  
The River Horse and scalie Crocodile.  
At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
Insect or Worme; those wav'd thir limber fans  
For wings, and smallost Lineaments exact  
In all the Liveries deft of Summers pride  
With spots of Gold and Purple, azur and green:  
480 These as a line thir long dimension drew,  
Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all  
Minims of Nature; some of Serpent kinde  
Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd.  
Thir Snakie foulds, and added wings, First ere  
The Parsimonious Emmer, provident  
Of future, in small room large heart enclos'd,  
Pattern of just equalitie perhapp's  
Hereafter, joyn'd in her popular Tribes  
Of Commonaltie: swarming next appeir'd  
The Femal Bee that feeds her Husband Drone  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen Cells  
With Honey stor'd: the rest are numberless,  
And thou thit Natures know'st; and gav'st them  
Needlest to thee repea'd; nor unknown (Names,  
The

The Serpent sutt'lt Beast of all the field,  
Of huge extent somtimes, with brazen Eyes  
And hairie Main terrific, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

Now Heav'n in all her Glorie shon, and rowld  
Her motions, as the great first-Movers hand  
First wheeld thir course; Earth in her rich attire  
Consummate lovly smil'd; Aire, Water, Earth,  
By Fowl, Fish, Beak, was flown, was swum, was walke  
Frequent; and of the Sixt day yet remain'd;  
There wanted yet the Master work, the end  
Of all yet don; a Creature who not prone  
And Brute as other Creatures, but endu'd  
With Sancttie of Reason, might erect  
His Stature, and upright with Front serene  
Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence  
Magnanimous to correspond with Heav'n,  
But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes  
Directed in Devotion, to adore  
And worship God Supream, who made him chief  
Of all his works: therefore the Omnipotent  
Eternal Father, For where is not hee  
Present) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man  
In our similitude, and let them rule  
Over the Fish and Fowle of Sea and Aire,  
Beast of the Field, and over all the Earth,  
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.  
This said, he fornd thee, *Adam*, thee O Man  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd  
The breath of Life; in his own Image hee

500

510

520

Created thee, in the Image of God  
Express, and thou becam'st a living Soul.  
Male he created thee, but thy consort  
530 Femal for Race ; then bless'd Mankinde, and said,  
Be fruitful, multiplie, and fill the Earth,  
Subdue it, and throughout Dominion hold  
Over Fish of the See, and Fowle of the Aire,  
And every living thing that moves on the Earth.  
Wherever thus created, for no place  
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st  
He brought thee into this delicious Grove,  
This Garden, planted with the Trees of God,  
Deleitable both to behold and taste ;

540 And freely all thir pleasant fruit for food  
Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th'Earth yeelds,  
Varietie without end ; but of the Tree  
Which tasted works knowledge of Good and Evil,  
Thou mai'st not ; in the day thou eat'st, thou di'st ;  
Death is the penaltie impos'd, beware,  
And govern well thy appetite, least sin  
Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.  
Here finish'd hee, and all that he had made  
View'd, and behold all was entirely good ;  
550 So Ev'n and Morn accomplish'd the Sixt day :  
Yet not till the Creator from his work  
Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd  
Up to the Heav'n of Heav'ns his high abode,  
Thence to behold this new created World  
Th' addition of his Empire, how it shew'd  
In prospect from his Throne, how good, how faire,  
Answering his great Idea. Up he rode  
Followd with acclamation and the sound

Symphonious of ten thousand Harpes that tun'd  
Angelic harmonies : the Earth, the Aire  
Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heardst)  
The Heav'ns and all the Constellations rung,  
The Planets in thir stations list'ning stood,  
While the bright Pomp ascended jubilant.  
Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,  
Open, ye Heav'ns, your living dores ; let in  
The great Creator from his work returnd  
Magnificent, his Six days work, a World ;  
Open, and henceforth oft ; for God will deigne  
To visit oft the dwellings of just Men  
Delighted, and with frequent intercourse  
Thither will send his winged Messengers  
On errands of supernal Grace. So sung  
The glorious Train ascending: He through Heav'n,  
That open'd wide her blazing Portals, led  
To Gods Eternal house direct the way,  
A broad and ample rode, whose dust is Gold  
And pavement Starrs, as Starrs to thee appeir,  
Seen in the Galaxie, that Milkie way  
Which nightly as a circling Zone thou seeest  
Pouderd with Starrs. And now on Earth the Sea-  
Eev'ning arose in *Eden*, for the Sun (venth  
Was set, and twilight from the East came on,  
Forerunning Night ; when at the holy mount  
Of Heav'n's high-seated top, th' Impereal Throne  
Of Godhead, fixt for ever firm and sure,  
The Filial Power arriv'd, and fate him down  
With his great Father (for he also went  
Invisible, yet staid (such priviledge  
Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd,

560

570

580

590

Author and end of all things, and from work  
Now resting, bles'd and hallow'd the Seay'nth day,  
As resting on that day from all his work,  
But not in silence holy kept; the Harp  
Had work and rested not, the solemn Pipe,  
And Dulcimer, all Organs of sweet stop,  
All sounds on Fret by String or Golden Wire,  
Temper'd soft Tunings, intermixt with Voice  
Choral or Unison: of incense Clouds  
Fuming from Golden Censers bid the Mount,  
Creation and the Six dayes acts they sung,  
Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite  
Thy power; what thought can measure thee, or  
Relate thee; greater now in thy return (tongue  
Then from the Giant Angels; thee that day  
Thy Thunders magnisid; but to create  
Is greater then created to destroy.  
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound  
Thy Empire? easily the proud attempt  
Of Spirits apostat and thir Counsels vaine  
Thou hast repeld, while impiously they thought  
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
The number of thy worshippers. Who seekes  
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
To manifest the more thy might: his evil  
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
Witness this new-made World, another Heav'n  
From Heaven Gate not farr, founded in view  
On the cleer *Hyaline*, the Glassie Sea;  
Of amplitude almost immense, with Starr's  
Numerous, and every Starr perhaps a World  
Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st

Thir

Thir seasons: among these the seat of men,  
 Earth with her nether Ocean circumfus'd,  
 Thir pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy men,  
 And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanc't,  
 Created in his Image; there to dwell  
 And worship him; and in reward to rule  
 Over his Works, on Earth, in Sea, or Air,  
 And multiply a Race of Worshippers  
 Holy and just: thrice happy if they know  
 Thir happiness, and persevere upright.

630

So sung they, and the Empyrean rung,  
 With *Halleluiahs*: Thus was Sabbath kept.  
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd  
 How first this World and face of things began,  
 And what before thy memorie was don  
 From the beginning, that posteritie  
 Infornd by thee might know; if else thou seekst  
 Aught, not surpassing human measure, say.

640

To whom thus *Adam* gratefully repli'd.  
 What thanks sufficient, or what recompence  
 Equal have I to render thee, Divine  
 Hystorian, who thus largely hast allay'd  
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and voutlast  
 This friendly condescension to relate  
 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard  
 With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
 With glorie attributed to the high  
 Creator; some thing yet of doubt remaines,  
 VVhich onely thy solution can resolve.  
 VVhen I behold this goodly Frame, this VVorld  
 Of Heavn and Earth consisting, and coinate,  
 Thir magnitudes, this Earth a spot, a graine,

650

An

Here begins the 8<sup>th</sup> Book of other edition

660

An Atom, with the Firmament compar'd  
And all her numberd Starrs, that seem to rowle  
Spaces incomprehensible (for such  
Thir distance argues and thir swift return  
Diurnal) meerly to officiate light  
Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,  
One day and night ; in all thir vast survey  
Useless besides, reasoning I oft admire,  
How Nature wise and frugal could commit  
Such disp roportions, with superfluous hand  
So many nobler Bodies to create,  
Greater so manifold to this one use,  
For aught appeers, and on thir Orbs impose  
Such restleſs revolution day by day  
Repeated, while the sedentarie Earth,  
That better might with farr leſs compaſſ move,  
Serv'd by more noble then her ſelf, attaines  
Her end without leaſt motion, and receaves,  
As Tribute ſuch a fumeleſs journey brought  
Of incorporeal ſpeed, her warmth and light ;  
Speed, to deſcribe whose ſwiftneſs Number failes.

670

So ſpake our Sire, and by his count'nce ſeemd  
Entring on ſtudious thoughts abſtrufe, which Eve  
Perceaving where ſhe ſat retir'd in ſight,  
With lowlineſs Majestic from her ſeat,  
And Grace that won who ſaw to wiſh her ſtay,  
Rose, and went forth among her Fruits and Flours,  
To viſit how they proſper'd, bud and bloom,  
Her Nurſerie ; they at her coming ſprung  
And toucht by her fair tendance gladlier grew.  
Yet went ſhe not, as not with ſuch diſcourse  
Delighted, or not capable her eare

680

Of

Of what was high : such pleasure she reserv'd,  
*Adam* relating, the sole Auditress ;  
Her Husband the Relater she preferr'd  
Before the Angel, and of him to ask  
Chose rather ; hee, she knew would intermix  
Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute  
With conjugal Carefles, from his Lip  
Not Words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now  
Such pairs, in Love and mutual Honour joyn'd ?  
With Goddess-like demeanour forth she went ;  
Not unattended, for on her as Queen  
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,  
And from about her shot Darts of desire  
Into all Eyes to wish her still in sight.  
And *Raphael* now to *Adam*'s doubt propos'd  
Benevolent and facil thus repli'd.

690

700

710

To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heav'n  
Is as the Book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wondrous Works, and learne  
His Seasons, Hours, or Days, or Months, or Yeares :  
This to attain, whether Heav'n move on Earth,  
Imports not, if thou reck'n right, the rest  
From Man or Angel the great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire ; or if they list to try  
Conjecture, he his Fabric of the Heav'n's  
Hath left to thir disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at thir quaint Opinions wide  
Hereafter, when they come to model Heav'n  
And calculate the Starrs, how they will weild  
The mightie frame, how build, unbuild, contrive

To

To saye appearences, how girt the Sphēar  
With Centrie and Eccentric scribl'd o're,  
Cycle and Epicycle, Orb in Orb :  
Alreadie by thy reasoning this I guesst,  
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest  
That Bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The lesst not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receavēs  
The benefit : consider first, that Great  
Or Bright inferrs not Excellence : the Earth  
Though, in comparison of Heav'n, so small,  
Nor glistening, may of solid good containe  
More plenty then the Sun that barren shines,  
Whose vertue on it selfe workes no effect,  
But in the fruitful Earth, there first receavēd  
His beams, unactive else, thir vigor find,  
Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries  
Officous, but to thee Earths habitant.  
And for the Heav'ns wide Circuit, let it speak  
The Makers high magnificence, who built  
So spacious, and his Line stretcht out so farr ;  
That Man may know he dwells not in his own ;  
An Edifice too large for him to fill,  
Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest  
Ordaing'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
The swiftness of those Circles attribute,  
Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,  
That to corporeal substances could adde.  
Speed almost Spiritual ; mee thou thinkst not slow,  
Who since the Morning hour set out from Heav'n  
Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd  
In *Eden*, distance inexpressible.

By Numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
Admitting Motion in the Heav'ns, to shew  
Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;  
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
God to remove his wayes from human sense,  
Plac'd Heav'n from Earth so farr, that earthly light,  
If it presume, might erre in things too high,  
And no advantage gaine. What if the Sun  
Be Center to the World, and other Starrs  
By his attractive vertue and thir own  
Incited, dance about him various rounds?  
760  
Thir wandring course now high, now low, then hid,  
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
In six thou seest, and what if sev'nth to these  
The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,  
Insensibly three different Motions move?  
Which else to several Sphears thou must ascribe,  
Mov'd contrarie with thwart obliquities,  
Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift  
Nocturnal and Diurnal rhomb suppos'd,  
Invisible else above all Starrs, the Wheele  
Of Day and Night; which needs not thy beleefe,  
If Earth industrious of her self fetch Day  
Travelling East, and with her part averse  
From the Suns beam meet Night, her other part  
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light  
Sent from her through the wide transpicuous aire,  
To the terrestrial Moon be as a Starr  
770  
Enlightning her by Day, as she by Night  
This Earth? reciprocal, if Land be there,  
Feilds and Inhabitants: Her spots thou seest

As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and Rain produce  
 Fruits in her soft'nd Soile, for some to eate  
 Allotted there ; and other Suns perhaps  
 With thir attendant Moons thou wilt descrie  
 Communicating Male and Femal Light,  
 Which two great Sexes animate the World,  
 Stor'd in each Orb perhaps with some that live.

790 For such vast room in Nature unpossest  
 By living Soule, desert and desolate,  
 Onely to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
 Each Orb a glimps of Light, conveyd so farr  
 Down to this habitable, which returnes  
 Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
 But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
 Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n  
 Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun,  
 Hee from the East his flaming rode begin,  
 Or Shee from West her silent course advance  
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
 On her soft Axle, while she paces Eev'n,  
 And bears thee soft with the smooth Air along,  
 Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,  
 Leave them to God above, him serve and feare ;  
 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,  
 Wherever plac't, let him dispose : joy thou  
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
 And thy faire Eve ; Heav'n is for thee too high  
 800 To know what passes there ; be lowlie wise :  
 Think onely what concernes thee and thy being ;  
 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there  
 Live, in what state, condition or degree,  
 Contented that thus farr hath been reveal'd

810

Not of Earth onely but of highest Heav'n.

To whom thus *Adam* cleerd of doubt, repli'd.

How fully hast thou satisi'd mee, pure

Intelligence of Heav'n, Angel serene,

And freed from intricacies, taught to live,

The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts

To interrupt the sweet of Life, from which

God hath bid dwell farr off all anxious cares,

And not molest us, unless we our selves

Seek them with wandring thoughts, and notions

But apt the Mind or Fancie is to roave (vaine.

820

Uncheckt, and of her roaving is no end;

Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learne,

That not to know at large of things remote

From use, obscure and futtle, but to know

That which before us lies in daily life,

Is the prime Wisdom, what is more, is fume,

Or emptinels, or fond impertinence,

And renders us in things that most concerne

Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.

830

Therefore from this high pitch let us descend

A lower flight, and speak of things at hand

Useful, whence haply mention may arise

Of somthing not unseasonable to ask

By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.

Thee I have heard relating what was don

Ere my remembrance: now hear mee relate

My Storie, which perhaps thou hast not heard;

And Day is yet not spent; till then thou seest

How futtly to detaine thee I devise,

Inviting thee to hear while I relate,

Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:

840

For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heav'n,  
And sweeter thy discourse is to my eare  
Then Fruits of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
And hunger both, from labour, at the houre  
Of sweet repast ; they satiate, and soon fill, (vine  
Though pleasant, but thy words with Grace Di-  
Imbu'd, bring to thir sweetnes no satietie.

To whom thus *Raphael* answer'd heav'ly meek.  
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,  
Nor tongue ineloquent ; for God on thee  
Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd  
Inward and outward both, his image faire : -  
Speaking or mute all comelines and grace.

Attends thee, and each word, each motion formes  
Nor less think wee in Heav'n of thee on Earth  
Then of our fellow servant, and inquire  
Gladly into the wayes of God with Man :  
For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set  
On Man his equal Love : say therefore on ;  
For I that Day was absent, as befell,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,  
Farr on excursion toward the Gates of Hell ;  
Squar'd in full Legion (such command we had)  
To see that none thence issu'd forth a spie,  
Or enemie, while God was in his work,  
Least hee incenstat such eruption bold,  
Destruction with Creation might have mixt.  
Not that they durst without his leave attempt,  
But us he sends upon his high behests  
For state, as Sovran King, and to ensure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast sliut  
The dismal Gates, and barricado'd strong ;

But

But long ere our approaching heard within  
Noise, other then the sound of Dance or Song,  
Torment, and lowd lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of Light  
Ere Sabbath Eev'ning : so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now; for I attend,  
Pleas'd with thy words no less then thou with mine.

880

So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.  
For Man to tell how human Life began  
Is hard; for who himself beginning knew?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse,  
Induc'd me. As new wak't from soundest sleep  
Soft on the flourie herb I found me laid  
In Balmie Sweat, which with his Beames the Sun  
Soon dri'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.  
Strait toward Heav'n my wondring Eyes I turnd,  
And gaz'd a while the ample Skie, till rais'd  
By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,  
As thitherward endevoring, and upright  
Stood on my feet; about me round I saw.

890

Hill, Dale, and shadie Woods, and sunnie Plaines,  
And liquid Lapse of murmuring Streatis; by these,  
Creatures that livd, and movd, and walk'd, or flew,  
Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd,  
With fragrance and with joy my heart o'reflow'd:  
My self I then perus'd, and Limb by Limb  
Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led:  
But who I was, or where, or from what cause,  
Knew not; to speak I tri'd, and forthwith spake,  
My Tongue obey'd and readily could name  
What e're I saw. Thou Sun, said I, faire Light,

900

And

910

And thou enlight'nd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
Ye Hills and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plaines,  
And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,  
Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?  
Not of my self; by soime great Maker then,  
In goodness and in power præminent;  
Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,  
From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
And feel that I am happier then I know.

920 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
From where I first drew Aire, and first beheld  
This happie Light, when answer none return'd,  
On a green shadie Bank profuse of Flours  
Pensive I sat me down; there gentle sleep  
First found me, and with soft oppression seis'd  
My droused sense, untroubl'd, though I thought  
I then was passing to my former state  
Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:

930 When suddenly stood at my Head a dream,  
Whose inward apparition gently mov'd  
My Fancy to believe I yet had being,  
And livd: One came, methought, of shape Divine,  
And said, thy Mansion wants thee, *Adam*, rise,  
First Man, of Men innumerable ordain'd  
First Father, call'd by thee I come thy Guide  
To the Garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd.  
So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,

And over Fields and Waters, as in Aire  
Smooth sliding without step, last led me up  
A woodie Mountain; whose high top was plaine,  
A Circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest Trees  
Planted, with Walks, and Bowers, that what I saw  
940 Of

Of Earth before scarce pleasant seemd. Each Tree  
Load'n with fairest Fruit, that hung to the Eye  
Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
To pluck and eate ; whereat I wak'd, and found  
Before mine Eyes all real, as the dream  
Had lively shadowd : Here had new begun  
My wandring, had not hee who was my Guide  
Up hither, from among the Trees appeer'd,  
Presence Divine. Rejoycing, but with aw  
In adoration at his feet I fell  
Submiss: he seat'd me, & Whom thou soughtst I am,  
Said mildly, Author of all this thou seest  
Above, or round about thee or beneath.  
This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
To Till and keep, and of the Fruit to eate :  
Of every Tree that in the Garden growes  
Eate freely with glad heart ; fear here no death :  
But of the Tree whose operation brings  
Knowldg of good and ill, which I have set  
The Pledge of thy Obedience and thy Faith,  
Amid the Garden by the Tree of Life,  
Remember what I warne thee, shun to taste,  
And shun the bitter consequence : for know,  
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
Transgrest, inevitably thou shalt dye ;  
From that day mortal, and this happie State  
Shalt loose, expell'd from hence into a World  
Of woe and sorrow. Sternly he pronounc'd  
The rigid interdiction, which reounds  
Yet dreadful in mine eare, though in my choice  
Not to incur ; but soon his cleer aspect  
Return'd and gratiouſ purpose thus renew'd.

950

960

970

Not

980

Not onely these fair bounds, but all the Earth  
To thee and to thy Race I give; as Lords  
Possess it, and all things that therein live,  
Or live in Sea, or Aire, Beast, Fish, and Fowle.  
In signe whereof each Bird and Beast beheld  
After thir kindes; I bring them to receave  
From thee thir Names, and pay thee fealtie  
With low subjection; understand the same  
Of Fish within thir watry residence,  
Not hither summond, since they cannot change  
Thir Element to draw the thinner Aire.

990

As thus he spake, each Bird and Beast beheld  
Approaching two and two, These cowring low  
With blandishment, each Bird stoop'd on his wing,  
I nam'd them, as they pass'd, and understood  
Thir Nature, with such knowledg God endu'd  
My sudden apprehension: but in these  
I found not what me thought I wanted still;  
And to the Heav'ly vision thus presum'd.

1000

O by what Name, for thou above all these,  
Above mankinde, or aught then mankiade higher,  
Surpassest farr my naming, how may I  
Adore thee, Author of this Universe,  
And all this good to man, for whose well being  
So amply, and with hands so liberal  
Thou hast provided all things: but with mee  
I see not who partakes. In solitude  
What happines, who can enjoy alone,  
Or all enjoying, what contentment find?  
Thus I presumptuous; and the vision bright,  
As with a smile more bright'nd, thus repli'd.  
What call'st thou solitude, is not the Earth

With

With various living creatures, and the Aire  
 Replenish't, and all these at thy command  
 To come and play before thee, know'st thou not  
 Thir language and thir wayes, they also know,  
 And reason not contemptibly ; with these  
 Find pastime, and beare rule ; thy Realm is large.  
 So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd  
 So ordering. I with leave of speech implor'd,  
 And humble deprecation thus repli'd.

1010 ?

Let not my words offend thee, Heav'nly Power,  
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.  
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
 And these inferiour farr beneath me set ?  
 Among unequals what societie  
 Can sort, what harmonie or true delight ?  
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due  
 Giv'n and receiv'd ; but in disparitie  
 The one intense, the other still remiss  
 Cannot well suite with either, but soon prove  
 Tedious alike : Of fellowship I speak  
 Such as I seek, fit to participate  
 All rational delight, wherein the brute  
 Cannot be human consort ; they rejoice  
 Each with thir kinde, Lion with Lions ;  
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast coudn'd ;  
 Much less can Bird with Beast, or Fish with Fowle  
 So well converse, nor with the Ox the Ape,  
 Worse then can Man with Beast, and least of all.  
 Whereto th' Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.  
 A nice and futtle happiness I see  
 Thou to thy self proposest, in the choice  
 Of thy Associates, Adam, and iwil taste

1020

1030

1040 No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitarie  
 What thinkst thou then of mee, and this my State,  
 Seem I to thee sufficiently possest  
 Of happiness, or not ? who am alone  
 From all Eternitie, for none I know  
 Second to mee : or like, equal much less,  
 How have I then with whom to hold converse,  
 Save with the Creatures which I made, and those  
 To me inferior, infinite descents  
 Beneath what other Creatures are to thee ?

1050 He ceas'd, Howly answer'd. To attaine  
 The high and depth of thy Eternal wayes  
 All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things,  
 Thou in thy self art perfect, and in thee  
 Is no deficience found; not so is Man,  
 But in degree, the cause of his desire  
 By conversation with his like to help,  
 Or solace his defects. No need that thou  
 Shouldst propagat, already infinite;  
 And through all numbers absolute, though One;  
 But Man by number is too manifest  
 1060 His single imperfection, and beget  
 Like of his like, his Image multipli'd,  
 In unitie defective, which requires  
 Collateral love, and dearest amitie.  
 Thou in thy secerne although alone,  
 Best with thy self accompanied, seek'st not  
 Social communication, yet so pleas'd,  
 Canst raise thy Creature to what hight thou wilt  
 Of Union or Communion, deir'd;  
 1070 By conversing cannot these erect  
 From prone, nor in thir wayes complaience find.

Thus I embold'nd spoke, and freedom us'd  
Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd  
This answer from the gracious voice Divine.

Thus farr to try thee, *Adam*, I was pleas'd,  
And finde thee knowing not of Beasts alone,  
Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thy self,  
Expressing well the spirit within thee free,  
My Image, not imparted to the Brute,  
Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee  
Good reason was thou freely shouldest dislike,  
And be so minded still ; I, ere thou spak'st,  
Knew it not good for Man to be alone,  
And no such companie as then thou saw'st  
Intended thee, for trial onely brought,  
To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet :  
What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,  
Thy likenes, thy fit help, thy other self,  
Thy wish, exactly to thy hearts desire.

1080

1090

1100

Hee ended, or I heard no more, for now  
My earthly by his Heav'ly overpow'rd,  
Which it had long stood under, streind to the bighth  
In that celestial Colloquie sublime,  
As with an object that excels the sense,  
Dazl'd and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
By Nature as in aide, and clos'd mine eyes.  
Mine eyes he clos'd, but op'st left the Cell  
Of Fancie my interral sight, by which  
Abstract as in a transe methought I saw,  
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;  
Who stooping op'd my left side, and took

From thence a Rib, with cordial spirits warne,  
And Life-blood streaming fresh, wide was the  
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up & heal'd: (wound,  
The Rib he form'd and fasten'd with his hands;  
Under his forming hands a Creature grew,  
Manlike, but different sex, so lovly faire,  
That what seemd fair in all the World, seemd now  
Mean, or in her summd up, in her contain'd  
And in her looks, which from that time infus'd  
Sweetness into my heart, unfehl before,  
And into all things from her Aire inspir'd  
The spirit of love and amorous delight,  
She disappear'd, and left me dark, I wak'd  
To find her, or for ever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjuro: .  
When out of hope, behold her, not farr off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adornd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable: On she came,  
Led by her Heav'ly Maker, though unseen,  
And guidid by his voice, nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial Sanctitie and marriage Rites:  
Grace was in all her steps, Heav'n in her Eye,  
In every gesture dignitie and, love.  
I overjoyd could not forbear aloud.  
This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd  
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benigne,  
Giver of all things faire, but fairest this  
Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see  
Bone of my Bone, Flesh of my Flesh, my Self  
Before me; Woman is her Name, of Man  
Extracted; for this cause he shall forgoe.

Father

Father and Mother, and to his Wife adhere ;  
And they shall be one Flesh, one Heart, one Soule.  
She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,  
Yet Innocence and Virgin Modestie,  
Her vertue and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won, 1140  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retir'd,  
The more desirable, or to say all,  
Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd ;  
I follow'd her, she what was Honour knew,  
And with obsequious Majestie approv'd  
My pleaded reason. To the Nuptial Bowre  
I led her blushing like the Morn : all Heavn,  
And happie Constellations on that houre 1150  
Shed thir selectest influence ; the Earth  
Gave sign of gratulation, and each Hilly,  
Joyous the Birds ; fresh Gales and gentle Aires  
Whisper'd it to the Woods, and from thir wings  
Flung Rose, flung Odours from the Spicie Shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous Bird of Night  
Sung Spoufai, and bid haste the Eevning Starr  
On his Hill top, to light the bridal Lamp.  
Thus I have told thee all my State, and brought  
My Storie to the sum of earthly bliss  
Which I enjoy, and must confess to find  
In all things else delight indeed, but such  
As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,  
Nor vehement desire, these delicacies  
I mean of Taste, Sight, Scent, Herbs, Fruits, & Flours,  
Walks, and the melodie of Birds ; but here  
Farr otherwise, transported I beheld,

Transf.

Transported touch; here passion first I felt,  
Comination strange; in all enjoyments else  
Superior and unmov'd, here onely weake  
1170 Against the charm of Beauties powerful glance.  
Or Nature fail'd in mee, and left some part  
Not proof enough such Object to sustain,  
Or from my side subducing, took perhaps  
More then enough; at least on her bestow'd  
Too much of Ornament, in outward shew  
Elaborate, of inward less exact.  
For well I understand in the prittie end  
Of Nature her th' inferiour, in the mind  
And inward Faculties, which most excell,  
In outward also her resembling less  
His Image who made both, and less expressing  
The character of that Dominion giv'n  
O're other Creatures; yet when I approach  
Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
And in her self compleat, so well to know  
Her own, that what she wills to do or say,  
Seems wisest, vertuousest, discretest, best;  
All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
Degraded, Wisdom in discourse with her  
1180 Loses discount'nan't, and like folly shewes;  
Authoritie and Reason on her waite,  
As one intended first, not after made  
Occasionally; and to consummate all,  
Greatnes of mind and noblenes thir seat  
Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
About her, as a guard Angelic plac't.  
To whom the Angel with contracted brow,  
Accuse not Nature, she hath don her part;

Do

Do thou but thine, and be not discontent  
 Of Wisdom, she deserts thee not, if thou  
 Dismiss her, when most thou needst her nigh,  
 By attributing overmuch to things  
 Less excellent, as thou thy self perceav'st.  
 For what admis'st thou, what transports thee so,  
 An outside? fair no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,  
 Not thy subjection: weigh with her thy self,  
 Then value: Oft times is nothing profits more.  
 Then self esteem, grounde don on just and right  
 Well manag'd; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
 The more she will acknowledge thee her Head,  
 And to realities yeild all her shows,  
 Made so adorator thy delight: the more,  
 So awful, that with honour thou maist love  
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind  
 Is propagated seem such dear delight,  
 Beyond all other, think the like would be  
 To Cattel and leach Beast; which should not be  
 To them made common & divulg'd; if ought  
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue:  
 The Soule of Man, or passion in him move.  
 What higher in her societie thou find'st  
 Attractive, human, rational, love still is.  
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
 Wherein true Love consists not; love refines  
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat  
 In Reason, and is judicious, is the scale  
 By which to heav'nly Love this maist ascend,  
 Not sunk in earthly pleasure, for which canse

Among

Among the Beasts no Mate for thee was found.

To whom thus half abash'd ~~and~~ repaid.

Neither her out-side form'd so fair, nor aught

In procreation common to all kindes

(Though higher of the genial Bed by far,

And with mysterious reverence I deem)

So much delights me, as thbse graceful acts,

Those thousand decencies that daily flow

From all her words and actions, mixt with Love

And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd

Union of Mind, or in us both one Soule; nor

Harmonie to behold in wedded pair

More grateful then harmonious sound to the eare.

Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose

What inward aheire I feel, not therefore soild,

Who meet with various objects, from thbse sense

Variously representing; yet still free

Approve the best, and follow what I approve.

To love thou blam'st me not, for love thou saist

Leads up to Heav'ny, is both the way and guide;

Bear with methen, if lawful what I ask;

Love not the heav'ny Spirits; and How thir Love

Express they, by looks onely; or do they mix

Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

To whom the Angel with a smile that glow'd

Celestial rosie red, Loves proper hue,

Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st

Us happy, and without Love no happiness.

Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st

(And pure thou wast created), we enjoy

In emmence, and obstacle find none

Of membrane, joyn't, or limb, exclusive bars;

Easier

Easier then Air with Air, if Spirits embrace,  
Total they mix, Union of Pure with Pure  
Deliring; nor restrain'd conveyance need  
As Flesh to mix with Flesh, or Soul with Soul.  
But I can now no more; the parting Sun  
Beyond the Earths green Cape and verdant Isles  
~~Her~~ ~~she can~~ sets, my Signal to depart.  
Be strong, live happy, and love, but first of all  
Him whom to love is to obey, and keep  
His great command; take heed least Passion sway  
Thy Judgement to do aught, which else free Will  
Would not admit; thine and of all thy Sons  
The weal or woe in thee is plac't; beware.  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the Blest: stand fast; to stand or fall  
Free in thine own Arbitrement, it lies.  
Perfet within, no outward aid require;  
And all temptation to transgres repel.

So saying, he arose ; whom *Adams* thus  
Follow'd with benediction. Since to pair,  
Go heavenly Guest, Ethereal Messenger,  
Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore.  
Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever  
With grateful Memorie : thou to mankind  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

So parted they, the Angel up to Heav'a  
From the thick shade, and *adam* to his Bowre.



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK VIII



O more of talk where God or Angel  
Guest  
With Man, as with his Friend, fami-  
liar us'd  
To sit indulgent, and with him  
partake

Rural repast, permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblam'd : I now must change  
Those Notes to Tragic ; foul distrust, and breach  
Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,  
And disobedience : On the part of Heav'n  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger and just rebuke, and judgement giv'n,  
That brought into this World a world of woe,  
Sinne and her shadow Death, and Miserie  
Deaths Harbinger : Sad task, yet argument  
Not less but more Heroic then the wrauth

Of stern *Achilles* on his Foe pursu'd  
 Thrice-Fugitive about *Troy* Wall; or rage  
 Of *Turnus* for *Lavinia* disespous'd,  
 Or *Neptun*'s ire or *Juno*'s, that so long  
 Persplex'd the *Greek* and *Cytherea*'s Son;  
 If answerable style I can obtaine  
 Of my Celestial Patroness, who deignes  
 Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,  
 And dictates to me slumbering, or inspires  
 Easie my unpremeditated Verse,  
 Since first this Subject for Heroic Song  
 Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late;  
 Not sedulous by Nature to indite  
 Warrs, hitherto the onely Argument  
 Heroic deem'd, chief maistrie to dissect  
 With long and tedious havoc fabl'd Knights  
 In Battels feign'd; the better fortitude  
 Of Patience and Heroic Martyrdom  
 Unsung; or to describe Races and Games,  
 Or tilting Furniture, emblazon'd Shields,  
 Impreses quaint, Caparisons and Steeds;  
 Bales and tinsel Trappings, gorgious Knights  
 At Joust and Torneament; then marshal'd Feast  
 Serv'd up in Hall with Sewers, and Seneschals;  
 The skill of Artifice or Office mean,  
 Not that which justly gives Heroic name  
 To Person or to Poem. Mee of these  
 Nor skilful nor studious, higher Argument  
 Remaines, sufficient of it self to raise  
 That name, unless in age too late, or cold  
 Climat, or Years stamp-ny intended wing  
 Deprest, and much they may, if all be mine,

Not Hers who brings it nightly to my Ear.  
 The Sun was sunk, and after him the Starr  
 Of *Hesperus*, whose Office is to bring  
 50 Twilight to the Earth, short Arbitr<sup>er</sup>  
 Twixt Day and Night, and now from end to end  
 Nights Hemisphere had veild the Horizon round:  
 When *Satan* who late fled before the threats  
 Of *Gabriel* out of *Eden*, how improv'd  
 In meditated fraud and malice, bent  
 On mans destruction, mangle what might hap  
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd  
 By Night he fled, and at Midnight return'd  
 From compassing the Earth, cautious of day,  
 60 Since *Uriel* Regent of the Sun descri'd  
 His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim  
 That keep their watch; hence full of anguish driv'n,  
 The space of seven continu'd Nights he rode  
 With darkness, thrice the Equinoctial Line  
 He circld, four times cross'd the Cart of Night,  
 From Pole to Pole, traversing each Course  
 On the eighth return'd, and on the Coast averse  
 From entrance of Cherubim Watch, by stealth  
 Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
 70 Now not, though Sin, not Time, first wrangt the  
 Where *Tigris* at the foot of Paradise  
 Change, into a Gulf shot under ground, till part  
 Rose up a Fountain by the Tree of Life;  
 In with the River sunk, and with it rose  
 Satan involv'd in rising Mist, then sought  
 Whereto he hid; Sea he had searcht and Land  
 From *Eden* over *Pompey*, and the *Poole*  
 Meeting, up beyond the River *Ob*,

Down-

Downward as farr Antarctic; and in length  
West from *Orontes* to the Ocean barr'd  
At *Darien*, thence to the Land where flowes  
*Ganges* and *Indus*: thus the Orb he roam'd  
With narrow search; and with inspection deep  
Consider'd every Creature, which of all  
Most opportune might serve his Wiles, and found  
The Serpent subtlest Beast of all the Field.

80

Him after long debate, irresolute  
Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose  
Fit Vessel, fittest Imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide  
From sharpest sight: for in the wylie Snake,  
Whatever sleights none wuld suspicous mark,  
As from his wit and native subtletie  
Proceeding, which in other Beasts observ'd  
Doubt might beget of Diabolic pow'r  
Active within beyond the sense of brute.  
Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward griefe  
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd:

90

O Earth, how like to Heav'n, if not preferid  
More justly, Seat worthier of Gods, as built  
With second thoughts, reforming what was old!  
For what God after better worse would build?  
Terrestrial Heav'n, danc't round by other Heav'ns  
That shine, yet bear thin bright officious Lamps,  
Light above Light, for thee alone, as seems  
In thee concentring all thir precious beams  
Of sacred influence: As God in Heav'n  
Is Centrè, yet exends to all, so thou receav'st  
Centring receav'st from all those Orbs in thee,  
Not in themselves, all thir known vertue appeers

100

Pro-

110

Productive in Herb, Plant, and nobler birth  
 Of Creatures animate with gradual life  
 Of Growth, Sense, Reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
 With what delight could I haye walkt thee round  
 If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
 Of Hill and Vallie, Rivers, Woods and Plaines,  
 Now Land, now Sea, & Shores with Forrest crownd,  
 Rocks, Dens, and Caves; but I in none of these  
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see  
 120 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel  
 Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
 Of contraries; all good to me becomes  
 Bane, and in Heav'n much worse would be my state.  
 But neither here seek I, no nor in Heav'n  
 To dwell, unless by maistring Heav'ns Supreme;  
 Nor hope to be my self less miserable  
 By what I seek, but others to make such  
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound:  
 For onely in destroying I finde ease  
 130 To my relentless thoughts; and him destroyd,  
 Or won to what may work his utter los,  
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
 Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,  
 In wo then; that destruction wide may range:  
 To mee shall be the glorie sole among  
 The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd  
 What he ~~Almighty~~ styl'd, six Nights and Days  
 Continu'd making, and who knows how long  
 Before had bin contriving, though perhaps  
 140 Not longer then since I in one Night freed  
 From servitude inglorious wehnigh half  
 Th' Angelic Name, and thinner left the throng

Of his adorers : hee to be aveng'd,  
And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,  
Whether such vertue spent of old now faid  
More Angels to Create, if they at least  
Are his Created or to spite us more,  
Determin'd to advance into our room  
A Creature form'd of Earth, and him endow,  
Exalted from so base original, 150  
With Heav'ly spoils, our spoils : What he decreed  
He effected; Man he made, and for him built  
Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,  
Him Lord pronounc'd, and, O indigotie !  
Subjected to his service Angel wings,  
And flaming Ministers to watch and tend  
Thir earthie Charge : Of these the vigilance  
I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
Of midnight vapor glide obscure, and prie  
In every Bush and Brake, where hap may finde  
The Serpent sleeping, in whose mazie foul'ds. 160  
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
O foul'descent ! that I who erst contended  
With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd  
Into a Beast, and mixt with bestial slime,  
This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
That to the hight of Deitie aspir'd;  
But what will not Ambition and Revenge  
Descend to ? who aspires must down as low  
As high he soard, obnoxious first or last  
To basest things. Revenge, at first though-sweat, 170  
Bitter ere long back on it self recoiles ;  
Let it ; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,  
Since higher I fall short, on him who next

Provokes

Provokes my envie, this new Favorite  
Of Heav'n, this Man of Clay, Son of despite,  
Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd  
From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.

180 So saying, through each Thicket Danck or Drie,  
Like a black mist low creeping, he held on  
His midnight search, where soonest he might finde  
The Serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found  
In Labyrinth of many a round self-rowld,  
His head the midst, well stor'd with futtle wiles:  
Not yet in horrid Shade or dismal Den,  
Not nocent yet, but on the grassie Herbe  
Fearless unfear'd he slept: in at his Mouth  
The Devil enterd, and his brutal sense,  
190 In heart or head, possessing soon inspir'd  
With ait intelligential; but his sleep  
Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of Morn.  
Now whenas sacred Light began to dawne  
In *Eden* on the humid Flours, that breathd  
Thir morning Incense, when all things that breath,  
From th' Earths great Altar send up silent praise  
To the Creator, and his Nostrils fill  
With gratefull Smell, forth came the human pair  
And joynd thir vocal Worship to the Quire  
Of Creatures wanting voice, that done, partake  
200 The season, prime for sweetest Sents and Aires:  
Then commune how that day they best may ply  
Thir growing work: for much thir work outgrew  
The hands dispatch of two Gardning so wide.  
And *Eve* first to her Husband thus began  
Adam, well may we labour still to dress  
This Garden, still to tend Plant, Herb and Flour.

Our pleasant task enjoyn'd, but till more hands  
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
Luxurious by restraint ; what we by day  
Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,  
One night or two with wanton growth derides  
Tending to wilde. Thou therefore now advise  
Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present,  
Let us divide our labours, 'thou where choice  
Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
The Woodbine round this Arbour, or direct  
The clasping Ivie where to climb, while I  
In yonder Spring of Roses intermixt  
With Myrtle, find what to redress till Noon :  
For while so near each other thus all day  
Our task we choose, what wonder if so near  
Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
Casual discourse draw on, which intermits  
Our dayes work brought to little, though begun  
Early, and th' hour of Supper comes unearn'd.

To whom mild answer *Adam* thus return'd.  
Sole *Eve*, Associate sole, to me beyond  
Compare above all living Creatures deare,  
Well hast thou motion'd, wel thy thoughts employd  
How we might best fulfill the work which here  
God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass  
Unprais'd : for nothing lovelier can be found  
In woman, then to studie houſhold good,  
And good workes in her Husband to promote.  
Yet not so ſtrictly hath our Lord impoſ'd  
Labour, as to debarr ys when we need  
Refreshment; whether food, or talk between,  
Food of the mind, or this ſweet intercourse

210

220

230

## Book 8.

*Paradise lost.*

240 Of looks and smiles, for smiles from Reason flow,  
To brute deni'd, and are of Love the food,  
Love not the lowest end of human life.  
For not to irksom toile, but to delight  
He made us, and delight to Reason joyn'd. (hands  
These paths and Bowers doubt not but our joyn't  
Will keep from Wildernes with ease, as wide  
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
Assist us : But if much converse perhaps  
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yeild.  
For solitude somtimes is best societie,  
250 And short retirement urges sweet retурне.  
But other doubt possesses me, least harm  
Befall thee sever'd from me ; for thou knowst  
What hath bin warn'd us, what malicious Foe  
Envying our happiness, and of his own  
Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame  
By fly assault ; and somwhere nigh at hand  
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
His wish and best advantage, us asunder,  
Hopeless to circumvent us joynd, where each  
260 To other speedie aide might lend at need ;  
Whether his first design be to withdraw  
Our fealtie from God, or to disturb  
Conjugal Love, then which perhaps no bliss  
Enjoy'd by us excites his envie more ;  
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
That gave thee being, stil shades thee and protects.  
The Wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
Safest and seemliest by her Husband staies,  
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.  
270 To whom the Virgin Majestie of Eve,

As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
With sweet austere composure thus reply'd.

Offspring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earths Lord,  
That such an Enemie we have, who seeks  
Our ruin, both by thee informd I learne,  
And from the parting Angel over-heard  
As in a shadie nook I stood behind,  
Just then returnd at shut of Evening Flours.

But that thou shouldst my firmness therfore doubt  
To God or thee, because we have a foe  
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
His violence thou fearst not, being such,  
As wee, not capable of death or paine,  
Can either not receave, or can repell.

His fraud is then thy fear, which plain inferrs  
Thy equal fear that my firm Faith and Love  
Can by his fraud be shak'n or seduc't ; (breft,  
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy  
*Adam*, misthought of her to thee so dear ?

To whom with healing words *Adam* reply'd.  
Daughter of God and Man, immortal *Eve*,  
For such thou art, from sin and blame entire :  
Not diffident of thee do I dissuade

Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
Th' attempt it self, intended by our Foe.  
For hee who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
The tempted with dishonour foul, suppos'd  
Not incorruptible of Faith, not prooff  
Against temptation : thou thy self with scorne  
And anger wouldest resent the offer'd wrong,  
Though ineffectual found ; misdeem not then,  
If such affront I labour to avert

280

290

300

Book 8. *Paradise lost.*

From thee alone, which on us both at once  
The Eneimie, though bold, will hardly dare,  
Or daring, first on mee th' assault shall light.  
Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn ;  
Suttle he needs must be, who could seduce  
Angels, nor think superfluous others aid.

310 Acces in every Virtue, in thy sight  
More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were  
Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,  
Shame to be overcome or over-reacht  
Would utmost vigor raise, and rais'd unite.  
Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
When I am present, and thy trial choose  
With me, best witness of thy Virtue tri'd.

So spake domestick *Adam* in his care  
And Matrimonial Love, but *Eve*, who thought  
320 Less attributed to her Faith sincere,  
Thus her reply with accent sweet renewd.

If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
In narrow circuit strait'nd by a Foe,  
Suttle or violent, we not endu'd  
Single with like defence, wherever met,  
How are we happie, still in fear of harm?  
But harm precedes not sin : onely our Foe  
Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem  
Of our integritie : his foul esteem  
330 Sticks no dishonor on our Front, but turns  
Foul on himself ; then wherfore shund or feard  
By us ? who rather double honour gaine  
From his surmisse prov'd false, finde peace within,  
Favour from Heav'n, our witness from th' event.

And

And what is Faith, Love, Vertue unaffaid  
 Alone, without exterior help sustaind?  
 Let us not then suspect our happie State  
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
 As not secure to single or combin'd.  
 Fraile is our happiness, if this be so,  
 And *Eden* were no *Eden* thus expos'd.

340

To whom thus *Adam* fervently repli'd.  
 O Woman, best are all things as the will  
 Of God ordaind them, his creating hand  
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left  
 Of all that he Created, much less Man,  
 Or ought that might his happie State secure,  
 Secure from outward force; within himself  
 The danger lies; yet lies within his power:  
 Against his will he can receave no harme.  
 But God left free the Will, for what obeys  
 Reason, is free, and Reason he made right,  
 But bid her well beware, and still erect;  
 Least by some faire appeirring good surpris'd  
 She dictate false, and misinforme the Will  
 To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
 Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoynes,  
 That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.  
 Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,  
 Since Reason not impossiblly may meet  
 Some specious object by the Foe suborn'd,  
 And fall into deception unaware,  
 Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
 Seek not temptation then, which to avoide  
 Were better, and most likeliest if from mee  
 Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.

350

360

Wouldst

Wouldst thou approve thy constancie, approve  
First thy obedience ; th' other who can know,  
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?

370 But if thou think, trial unsought may finde  
Us both securer then thus warnd thou seemst,  
Go ; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more ;  
Go in thy native innocence, relie  
On what thou hast of vertue, summon all,  
For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.

So spake the Patriarch of Mankinde, but *Eve*  
Persisted, yet submis, though last, repli'd.

With thy permission then, and thus forewarnd  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touchd onely, that our trial, when least sought,  
May finde us both perhaps farr less prepar'd,  
The willinger I goe, nor much expect  
A Foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;  
So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.  
Thus saying, from her Husbands hand her hand  
Soft she withdrew, and like a Wood-Nymph light  
*Oread* or *Dryad*, or of *Delia's* Traine,  
Betook her to the Groves, but *Delia's* self  
In gate surpas'd and Goddess-like deport,  
Though not as shee with Bow and Quiver armd,  
But with such Gardning Tools as Art yet rude,  
Guiltless of fire had formd, or Angels brought.  
To *Pales*, or *Pomona*, thus adornd,  
Likest she seemd, *Pomona* when she fled  
*Vertumnus*, or to *Ceres* in her Prime,  
Yet Virgin of *Proserpina* from *Jove*,  
Her long with ardent look his Eye pursy'd  
Delighted, but desiring more her stay.

Oft he to her his charge of quick returne  
Repeated, shee to him as oft engag'd  
To be returnd by Noon amid the Bowre,  
And all things in best order to invite  
Noontide repast, or Afternoons repose.  
O much deceav'd, much failing, hapless *Eve*,  
Of thy presun'd return! event perverse!  
Thou never from that houre in Paradise  
Foundst either sweet repast, or sound repose;  
Such ambush hid among sweet Flours and Shades  
Waited with hellish rancor imminent  
To intercept thy way, or send thee back  
Despoild of Innocence, of Faith, of Bliss.  
For now, and since first break of dawne the Fiend,  
Meer Serpent in appearance, forth was come,  
And on his Quest, where likeliest he might finde  
The onely two of Mankinde, but in them  
The whole included Race, his purposd prey.  
In Bowre and Field he sought, where any tuft  
Of Grove or Garden-Plot more pleasant lay,  
Thir tendance or Plantation for delight,  
By Fountain or by shadie Rivulet  
He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
*Eve* separate, he wish'd, but not with hope  
Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,  
Beyond his hope, *Eve* separate he spies,  
Veild in a Cloud of Fragrance, where she stood,  
Half spi'd, so thick the Roses bushing round  
About her glowd, oft stooping to support  
Each Flour of slender stalk, whose head though  
Carnation, Purple, Azure, or speckt with Gold, (gay  
Hung drooping unsustaintd, them she upstaies  
Gently

400

410

420

430

Gently with Mirtle band, mindleſſ the while,  
Her ſelf, though faireſt unsupported Flour,  
From her beſt prop ſo farr, and ſtorm ſo nigh.  
Neerer he drew, and many a walk travers'd  
Of ſtateleſt Covert, Cedar, Pine, or Palme,  
Then yolute and bold, now hid, now ſeen  
Ainong thick-wov'n Arborets and Flours  
Imborderd on each Bank, the hand of *Eve* :  
Spot more delicious then those Gardens feign'd

440 Or of reviv'd *Adonis*, or renouwd  
*Alcinous*, host of old *Laertes* Son,  
Or that, hot Mystic, where the Sapient King  
Held dalliance with his faire *Egyptian* Spouse.  
Much hee the Place admir'd, the Person more.  
As one who long in populous City pent,  
Where Houses thick and Sewers annoy the Aire,  
Forth illuing on a Summers Morn to breathe  
Among the pleasant Villages and Farmes  
Adjoyn'd, from each thing met conceaves delight,  
The ſmell of Grain, or tedded Graſs, or Kine,  
Or Dairie, each rural ſight, each rural ſound;  
If chance with Nymphlike ſtep fair Virgin paſſ,  
What pleaſing ſeemid, for her now pleaſes more,  
She moſt, and in her look ſumms all Delight.  
Such Pleaſure took the Serpent to behold  
This Flouriſt flat, the ſweet receſs of *Eve*  
Thus earlie, thus alone ; her Heav'ly forme  
Angelie, but moſe soft, and Feminine,  
Her graceful Innocence, her every Aire  
Of gesture or leſt action overzwd  
His Malice, and with rapine ſweet bereav'd  
His fiercenſeſs of the fierce intent it brought :

That

That space the Evil one abstracted stood  
From his own evil, and for the time remaind  
Stupidly good, of enmitie disarm'd,  
Of guile, of hate, of envie, of revenge ;  
But the hot Hell that alwayes in him burns,  
Though in mid Heav'n, soon ended his delight,  
And tortures him now more, the more he fees  
Of pleasure not for him ordain'd : then soon  
Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

470

Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what  
Compulsion thus transported to forget (sweet  
What hither brought us, hate, not love, nor hope  
Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,  
Save what is in destroying, other joy  
To me is lost. Then let me not let pass  
Occasion which now smiles, behold alone  
The Woman, opportune to all attempts,  
Her Husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
And strength, of courage hautie, and of limb  
Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould,  
Foe not informidable, exempt from wound,  
I not ; so much hath Hell debas'd, and paine  
Infeebld me, to what I was in Heav'n.  
Shee fair, divinely fair, fit Love for Gods,  
Not terrible, though terrour be in Love  
And beautie, not approacht by stronger hate,  
Hate stronger, under shew of Love well feign'd,  
The way which to her I now tend.

480

So spake the Enemie of Mankind, enclos'd

G g

In

490

In Serpent, Inmate bad, and toward *Eve*  
Address'd his way, not with indented wave,  
Prone on the ground, as since, but on his reare,  
Circular base of rising foulds, that tour'd  
Fould above fould a surging Maze, his Head  
500 Crested aloft, and Carbuncle his Eyes;  
With burnisht Neck of verdant Gold, erect  
Amidst his circling Spires, that on the grass  
Floted redundant: pleasing was his shape,  
And lovely, never since of Serpent kind  
Lovelier, not those that in *Illyria* chang'd  
*Hermione* and *Cadmus*, or the God  
In *Epidaurus*; nor to which transform'd  
*Ammonian Jove*, or *Capitoline* was seen,  
Hee with *Olympian*, this with her who bore  
510 *Scipio* the hight of *Rome*. With tract oblique  
At first, as one who sought access, but feard  
To interrupt, side-long he works his way.  
As when a Ship by skilful Stearman wrought  
Nigh Rivers mouth or Fozeland, where the Wind  
Veres oft, as-oft so steers, and shifts her Saile;  
So varied hee, and of his tortuous Traine  
Curld many a wanton wreath in sight of *Eve*,  
To lure her Eye; shee basid heard the sound  
Of rustling Leaves, but minded not, as us'd  
520 To such disport before her through the Field,  
From every Beast, more duteous at her call,  
Then at *Cyrene* call the Herd disquis'd.  
Hee boulder now, until'd before her stood  
But as in gaze, admiring. Oft he bawd  
His turret Crest, and sleekt enatne'd Neck,  
Fawnjing, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.

His

His gentle dumb expression surnd at length  
The Eye of Eve to mark his play ; he glad  
Of her attention gained, with Serpent Tongue  
Organic, or impulse of vocal Air,  
His fraudulent temptation thus began.

530

Wonder not, suvran Mistress, if perhaps  
Thou canst, who art sole Wonder, much less arm  
Thy looks, the Heav'n of mildness, with disdain,  
Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
Insatiate, I thus fingle, nor have feard  
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
Fairest resemblance of thy Maker faire,  
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
By gift, and thy Celestial Beautie adore  
With ravishment beheld, there best beheld  
Where universally admir'd ; but here  
In this enclosure wild, these Beasts among,  
Beholders rude, and shallow to discerne  
Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
Who sees thee ? (and what is one?) who shouldst be  
A Goddes among Gods, ador'd and serv'd (seen  
By Angels numberless, thy daily Train.

540

So gloz'd the Tempter, and his Proem tun'd ;  
Into the Heart of Eve his words made way,  
Though at the voice much marveling ; at length  
Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.  
What may this mean? Language of Man pronounc'd  
By Tongue of Brute, and human sense exprest?  
The first at least of these I thought deni'd  
To Beasts, whom God on thir Creation Day  
Created muse to articulate sound ;  
The latter I deni're, for in thir looks

550

Much reason, and in thir actions oft appears.  
560 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field  
I knew, but not with human voice endu'd ;  
Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
To me so friendly grown above the rest  
Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight ?  
Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.  
Empress of this fair World, resplendent Eve,  
Easie to mee it is to tell thee all  
570 What thou commandst, and right thou shouldst be  
I was at first as other Beasts that graze (obeyd:  
The trodden Herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd  
Or Sex, and apprehended nothing high :  
Till on a day roaving the field, I chanc'd  
A goodly Tree farr distant to behold  
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mixt,  
Ruddie and Gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;  
When from the boughes a favorie odour blow'n,  
580 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense  
Then smell of sweetest Fenel, or the Teats  
Of Ewe or Goat dropping with Milk at Eevn,  
Unsuckt of Lamb or Kid, that tend thir play.  
To satisfie the sharp desire I had  
Of tasting those fair Apples, I resolv'd  
Not to deferr ; hunger and thirst at once,  
Powerful persuaders, quick'nd at the scent  
Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keene.  
About the Mollie Trunk I wound me soon,  
590 For high from ground the branches would require

Thy

Thy utmost reach or *Adams*: Round the Tree  
 All other Beasts that saw, with like desire  
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
 Amid the Tree now got, where plentie hung  
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
 I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour  
 At Feed or Fountain never had I found.  
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceave  
 Strange alteration in me, to degree  
 Of Reason in my inward Powers, and Speech  
 Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.  
 Thenceforth to Speculations high or deep  
 I turnd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
 Considerd all things visible in Heav'n,  
 Or Earth, or Middle, all things fair and good;  
 But all that fair and good in thy Divine  
 Semblance, and in thy Beauties heav'nly Ray  
 United I beheld; no Fair to thine  
 Equivalent or second, which compel'd  
 Mee thus, though importune perhaps, to come  
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd  
 Sovran of Creatures, universal Dame.

600

610

620

So talk'd the spirited fly Snake; and *Eve*  
 Yet more amaz'd unwarie thus reply'd.

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
 The vertue of that Fruit, in thee first prov'd:  
 But say, where grows the Tree, from hence how  
 For many are the Trees of God that grow (far?)  
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
 To us, in such abundance lies our choice,  
 As leaves a greater store of Fruit untouch'd,  
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men

Grow

Grow up to thir provision, and more hands  
Help to disburden Nature of her Bearth.

To whom the wile Adder, blithe and glad,  
Empress, the way is readie, and not long,  
Beyond a row of Myrtles, on a Flat,  
Fast by a Fountain, one small Thicket past  
Of blowing Myrrh and Balsme; if thou accept  
630 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

Lead then, said Eve. Hee leading swiftly rowld  
In tangles, and make intricate seem strait,  
To mischief swift, Hope elevates, and joy  
Bright'ns his Crest, as when a wandring Fire  
Compact of unctuous vapor, which the Night  
Condenses, and the cold invirons round,  
Kindl'd through agitation to a Flame,  
Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,  
Hovering and blazing with delusive Light,  
640 Misleads th' amaz'd Night-wanderer from his way  
To Boggs and Mires, & oft through Pond or Poole,  
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour farr.  
So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud  
Led Eve our credulous Mother, to the Tree  
Of prohibition, root of all our woe,  
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming bither,  
Fruitless to me, though Fruit be here to excess,  
The credit of whose vertue rest with thee,  
650 Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects.  
But of this Tree we may not taste nor touch;  
God so commanded, and left that Command  
Sole Daughter of his voice; the rest we live  
Law to our selves, our Reason is our Law, and  
To

To whom the Tempter guilefully repli'd.  
Indeed? hath God then said that of the Fruit  
Of all these Garden Trees ye shall not eate,  
Yet Lords declar'd of all in Earth or Aire?

To whom thus Eve yet sinless: Of the Fruit  
Of each Tree in the Garden we may eate,  
But of the Fruit of this fair Tree amidst

660

The Garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eate  
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, least ye die. (bold

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more  
The Tempter, but with shew of Zeale and Love  
To Man, and indignation at his wrong,  
New part puts on, and as to passion mov'd,  
Fluctuats: disturb'd, yet comely, and in act  
Rais'd, as of som great matter to begin.  
As when of old som Orator renound

670

In *Athens* or free *Rome*, where Eloquence  
Flourishd, since mute, to som great cause ad'rest,  
Stood in himself collected, while each part,  
Motion, each act wots audience ere the tongue,  
Somtimes in highth began, as no delay  
Of Preface brooking through his Zeal of Right.  
So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown  
The Tempter all impalliond: thus began.

O Sacred, Wise, and Wisdom-giving Plant,  
Mother of Science, Now I feel thy Power  
Within me cleere; not oevly to discerne  
Things in thir Causes, but to trace the wayes  
Of higheft Agents; deambulating, & wise,  
Queen of this Universel: doth not believe  
Those rigid threats of Death, ye shall not Die:  
How shoulde ye? by the Fruit? it gives you Life

680

To

590

To Knowledge? By the Threatner, look on mee,  
 Mee who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,  
 And life more perfet have attaind then Fate  
 Meant mee, by ventring higher then my Lot.  
 Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast  
 Is open? or will God incense his ire  
 For such a petty Trespass, and not praise  
 Rather your dauntless vertue, whom the pain  
 Of Death denounc't, whatever thing Death be,  
 Deterd not from atchieving what might lende  
 To happier life, knowledge of Good and Evil;  
 Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil  
 Be real, why not known, since easier shunnd?

700

God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;  
 Not just, not God; not feard then, nor obeid:  
 Your feare it self of Death removes the feare.  
 Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,  
 Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
 His worshippers; he knows that in the day  
 Ye Eat thereof, your Eyes that seem so cleere,  
 Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then  
 Op'nd and cleerd, and ye shall be as Gods,  
 Knowing both Good and Evil as they know.

710

That ye should be as Gods, since I as Man,  
 Internal Man, is but proportion meet,  
 I of brute human, yet of human Gods.  
 So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
 Human, to put on Gods, death to be wisht, (bring.  
 Though threat'nd, which no worse then this can  
 And what are Gods that Man may not become  
 As they, participating God-like food?  
 The Gods are first, and that advantage use

On

On our belief, that all from them proceeds ;  
I question it, for this fair Earth I see,  
Warm'd by the Sun, producing every kind,  
Them nothing : If they all things, who enclos'd  
Knowledge of Good and Evil in this Tree,  
That whoso eats thereof, forthwith attains  
Wisdom without their leave ? and wherein lies  
Th' offence, that Man should thus attain to know ?  
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this Tree  
Impart against his will if all be his ?  
Or is it envie, and can envie dwell  
In heav'ly brests ? these, these and many more  
Causes import your need of this fair Fruit.  
Goddes humane, reach then, and freely taste.

720

730

740

He ended, and his words replete with guile  
Into her heart too easie entrance won :  
Fixt on the Fruit she gaz'd, which to behold  
Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound  
Yet rung of his perfwasive words, impregn'd  
With Reason, to her seeming, and with Truth ;  
Meanwhile the hour of Noon drew on, and wak'd  
An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell  
So favorie of that Fruit, which with desire,  
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,  
Sollicited her longing eye ; yet first  
Pausing a while, thus to her self she mus'd.

Great are thy Vertues, doubtless, best of Fruits,  
Though kept from Man, & worthy to be admir'd,  
Whose taste, too long forborn, at first assay  
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
The Tongue not made for Speech to speak thy  
Thy praise bee also who forbids thy use, (praise :  
H h

Con-

750

Conceales not from us, naming thee the Tree  
Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;  
Forbids us then to taste, but this forbidding  
Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
By thee communicated, and our want:  
For good unknown, sure is not had, or had  
And yet unknown, is as not had at all.  
In plain then, what forbids he but to know,  
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?

760 Such prohibitions bind not: But if Death  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
Our inward freedom? In the day we eat  
Of this fair Fruit, our doom is, we shall die.  
How dies the Serpent? he hath eat'n and lives,  
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,  
Irrational till then. For us alone  
Was death invented? or to us deni'd  
This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?  
For Beasts it seems: yet that one Beast which first  
Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy  
The good befall'n him, Author unsuspect,  
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.  
What fear I then, rather what know to feare  
Under this ignorance of Good and Evil,  
Of God or Death, of Law or Penaltie?  
Here growst the Curse of all, this Fruit Divine,  
Fair to the Eye, inviting to the Taste,  
Of virtue to make wise: what hind'rs then  
To reach, and feed at once both Bodie and Mind?

770 So saying, her rash hand in evil hour  
Forth reaching to the Fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:  
Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat  
Sighing

Sighing through all her Works gave signs of woe,  
That all was lost. Back to the Thicket flunk,  
The guiltie Serpent, and well might, for Eve  
Intent now wholly on her taste, naught else  
Regarded, such delight till then, as loem'd  
In Fruit she never falted, whether true  
Or faslied so, through expectation high  
Of knowledg, nor was God-head from her thought, 790  
Greedily she engorg'd without restraint,  
And knew not eating Death : Satiate at length  
And hight'nd as with Wine, jocond and boon,  
Thus to her self she pleasingly began.

O Sovran, vertuous, precious of all Trees  
In Paradise, of operation blest  
To Sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,  
And thy fair Fruit let hang, as to no end,  
Created; but henceforth my early care,  
Not without Song, each Morning, and due praise 800  
Shall tend thee, and the fertil burden eale  
Of thy full branches offer'd free to all,  
Till dfted by thee I grow mature  
In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know ;  
Though others envie what they cannot give ;  
For had the gift bin theirs, it had not here  
Thus grown. Experience next to thee I owe,  
Best guide; nor following thee I had remain'd  
In ignorance, thou on oit y'ldours Way,  
And giv'st ayses, though secret, Ibe ref're,  
And I perhaps am secret. Heav'n is high ; 810  
High and remote to see from hence, susteinch  
Each thing on Earth, and o'th' case perhapp's  
May have diverced from continual warch

Our great Forbidd'r, safe with all his Spies  
About him. But to *Adam* in what sort  
Shall I appear? shall I to him make known  
As yet my change, and give him to partake  
Full happiness with mee, or rather not,

820 But keep the odds of Knowledge in my power  
Without Copartner? so to add what wants  
In Femal Sex, the more to draw his Love,  
And render me more equal, and perhaps,  
A thing not undefireable, sometime

Superior; for inferior who is free?  
This may be well: but what if God have seen,  
And Death ensue? then I shall be no more,  
And *Adam* wedded to another *Eve*,

830 Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;  
A death to think. Conjur'd then I resolve,  
*Adam* shall share with me in bliss or woe:  
So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the Tree her step she turn'd,  
But first low Reverence don, as to the power  
That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd  
Into the plant Icential sap, deriv'd  
From Nectar, drink of Gods. *Adam* the while

Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
840 Of choicest Flours a Garland to adorn  
Her Tresses, and her rural labours crown  
As Reapers oft are wont thir Harvest Queen.  
Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd;  
Yet oft his heart, divine of somthing ill,  
Misgave him; bee the faultring measure felt;

And

And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That Morn when first they parted ; by the Tree  
Of Knowledge he must pass, there he her met,  
Scarfe from the Tree returning ; in her hand  
A bough of fairest fruit that downie smil'd,  
New gather'd, and ambrosial sinell diffus'd.  
To him she hasted, in her face excuse

850

Came Prologue, and Apologie to prompt,  
Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.

Haſt thou not wonder'd, *Adam*, at my stay ?  
Thee I have miſt, and thought it long, depriv'd  
Thy preſence, agonie of love till now  
Not felt, nor ſhall be twice, for never more  
Mean I to trie, what raſh untri'd I ſought,  
The paine of abſence from thy fight. But ſtrange  
Hath bin the cauſe, and wonderfull to heare :  
This Tree is not as we are told, a Tree  
Of danger taſted, nor to evil unknown  
Op'ning the way, but of Divine effect  
To open Eyes, and make them Gods who taſte ;  
And hath bin taſted ſuch : the Serpent wiſe,  
Or not reſtraineſ as wee, or not obeying,  
Hath eaſt'n of the fruit, and iſ become,  
Not dead, as we are threatn'd, but thenceforth  
Endu'd with huſtan voice and huſtan ſenſe,  
Reaſoning to admiration, and with mee  
Perſuasively hath ſo prevaiſed, that I  
Have alſo taſted, and have alſo found  
Th' effects to correfpond, opener mine Eyes,  
Dimm erſt, dilated ſpirits, ampler Heart,  
And growing up to Godhead ; which for thee  
Chiefly I ſought, without thee can deſpise.

860

870

For

For blis, as thou hast part, to me is blis,  
 880 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.  
 Thou therfore also taste, that equal Lot  
 May joyne us, equal Joy, as equal Love;  
 Least thou not tasting, different degree  
 Disjoyne us, and I then too late renounce  
 Deitie for thee, when Fate will not permit.

Thus *Eve* with Countnance blithe her storie told;  
 But in her Cheek distemper flushing glowl'd.  
 On th' other side, *Adam*, soon as he heard  
 The fatal Trespass don by *Eve*, amaz'd,  
 890 Astonied stood and Blank, while horror chill  
 Ran through his veins, and all his joyns relax'd;  
 From his slack hand the Garland wreath'd for *Eve*  
 Down drop'd, and all the faded Roseshed:  
 Speechles he stood and pale, till thus at length  
 First to himself he inward silence broke.

O fairest of Creation, last and best  
 Of all Gods Works, Creature in whom excell'd  
 Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,  
 Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!  
 900 How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,  
 Defact, deflour'd, and now to Death devote?  
 Rather how hast thou yeelded to transgres  
 The strict forbiddance, how to violat  
 The sacred Fruit forbidd'n! som cursed fraud  
 Of Enemie hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,  
 And mee with thee hath raund, for with thee  
 Certain my resolution is to Die;  
 How can I live without thee, how forgoe  
 Thy sweet Converse and Love so dearly joyn'd,  
 910 To live again in these wilde Woods forlorn?

Should

Should God create another *Eve*, and I  
 Another Ribafford, yet loss of thee  
 Would never from my heart; no no, I feel  
 The Link of Nature draw me: Flesh of Flesh,  
 Bone of my Bone thou art, and from thy State  
 Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
 Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd  
 Submitting to what seem'd remediless,  
 Thus in calme mood his Words to *Eve* he turnd.

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventrous *Eve*,  
 And peril great provok't, who thus hast dar'd  
 Had it bin onely coveting to Eye  
 That sacred Fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
 Much more to taste it under banne to touch.  
 But past who can recall, or don undoe?  
 Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate, yet so  
 Perhaps thou shalt not Die, perhaps the Fact  
 Is not so hainous now, fortaсты Fruit,  
 Profan'd first by the Serpent, by him first  
 Made common and unhallowd ere our taste;  
 Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,  
 Lives, as thou saidst, and gaines to live as Man  
 Higher degree of Life, inducement strong  
 To us, as likely tasting to attaine  
 Proportional ascent, which cannot be  
 But to be Gods, or Angels Demi-gods.

Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
 Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy  
 Us his prime Creatures, dignifi'd so high,  
 Set over all his Works, which in our Fall,  
 For us created, needs with us must faile,

Dependent

920

930

940

Dependent made ; so God shall uncreate,  
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour loose,  
Not well conceav'd of God, who though his Power  
Creation could repeate, yet would be loath  
Us to abolish, least the Adversary  
Triumph and say ; Fickle their State whom God  
Most Favors, who can please him long ? Mee first  
950 He ruind, now Mankind ; whom will he next ?  
Matter of soorne, not to be given the Foe.  
However I with thee have fixt my Lot,  
Certain to undergoe like doom, if Death  
Consort with thee, Death is to mee as Life ;  
So forcible within my heart I feel  
The Bond of Nature draw me to my owne,  
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine ;  
Our State cannot be severd, we are one,  
One Flesh ; to loose thee were to loose my self.  
960 So *Adam*, and thus *Eve* to him repli'd.  
O glorious trial of exceeding Love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high !  
Ingaging me to emulate, but short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attaine,  
*Adam*, from whose deare side I boast me sprung,  
And gladly of our Union heare thee speak,  
One Heart, one Soul in both; whereof good prooff  
This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd,  
Rather then Death or aught then Death more dread  
970 Shall separate us, linkt in Love so deare,  
To undergoe with mee one Guilt, one Crime,  
If any be, of tasting this fair Fruit,  
Whose vertue, for of good still good proceeds,  
Direct, or by occasion hath presented

This happie trial of thy Love, which else  
So eminently never had bin known.

Were it I thought Death menac't would ensue  
This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
The worst, and not perswade thee, rather die  
Deserted, then oblige thee with a fact  
Pernicious to thy Peace, chiefly assur'd  
Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
So faithful Love unequals'd; but I feel  
Farr otherwaise th' event, not Death, but Life  
Augmented, op'd Eyes, new Hopes, new Joyes,  
Taste so Divine, that what of sweet before  
Hath toucht my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh,  
On my experience, *Adam*, freely taste,  
And fear of Death deliver to the Windes.

980

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy  
Tenderly wept, much won that he his Love  
Had so enobl'd, as of choice to incur  
Divine displeasure for her sake, or Death.  
In recompence (for such compliance bad  
Such recompence best merits) from the bough  
She gave him of that fair enticing Fruit  
With liberal hand: he scrupl'd not to eat  
Against his better knowledge, not deceav'd,  
But fondly overcome with Femal charm.  
Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again  
In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan,  
Skie lowr'd, and muttering Thunder, som sad drops  
Wept at compleating of the mortal Sin  
Original; while *Adam* took no thought,  
Eating his fill, nor *Eve* to iterate  
Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe

990

1000

I i

Him

Him with her lov'd societies, that now suggest and  
As with new Wit intoxicat'd both: charms  
They swim in mirth, and fancie that they feel  
1010 Divinitie within them breeding wings in you  
Wherewith to scorn the Earth: but that false Fruit  
Farr other operation first displaid, with desire  
Carnal desire enflaming, hee on *Eve* of desire  
Began to cast lascivious Eyes, the him  
As wantonly repaid; in Lust they burne:  
Till *Adam* thus 'gan *Eve* to dalliance move.

*Eve*, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
And elegant, of Sapience no small part,  
Since to each meating favour we apply,  
1020 And Palate call judicious; I the praise  
Yeild thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
From this delightful Fruit, nor known till now  
True relish, talting; if such pleasure be  
In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd,  
For this one Tree had bin forbidden ten.  
But come, so well refresh't, now let us play,  
As meet is, after such delicious Fare;  
For never did thy Beautie since the day  
1030 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd  
With all perfections, so enflame my sense  
With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now  
Then ever, bountie of this vertuous Tree.

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
Of amorous intent, well understood  
Of *Eve*, whose Eye darted contagious Fire.  
Her hand he seis'd, and to a shadie bank,  
Thick' overhead with verdant roof imbowr'd

He led her nothing loath; Flours were the Couches,  
Pansies, and Violets, and Aſphodel,

And Hyacinth, Earths freshest softest lap.

There they thir fill of Love and Loves disport  
Took largely, of thir mutual guilt the Scale,  
The ſolace of thir ſin, till dewie ſleep  
Oppreſt'd them, wearied with thir amorous play.

Soon as the force of that fallacious Fruit,

That with exhilarating vapour bland.

About thir ſpirits had plaid, and inmost powers

Made erre, was now exhal'd, and groſſet ſleep

Bred of unkindly fernes, with conſcious dreams

Encumberd, now had left them, up they roſe

As from unrefl., and each the other viewing,

Soon found thir Eyes how op'nd, and thir minds

How dark'nd; innocence, that as a veile

Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gon,

Just confidence, and native righteousness,

And honour from about them, naked left

To guiltie shame hee cover'd, but his Robe

Uncover'd more. So roſe the Dānīte strong

Herculean Samſon from the Harlot-lap

Of Philisteian Dalilah, and wak'd

Shorn of his Strength, They deſtitute and bare

Of all thir vertue; ſilent, and in face

Confounded long they ſate, as ſtrucken mute,

Till Adam, though not leſs then Eve abash'd,

At length gave utterance to thſe words conſtraintd.

O Eve, in ev'hour thou diſt give eare

To that falſe Worth, of whomſoever taught

To counterfeſt Mans voice, true in our Fall,

False in our promis'd Rifeing; ſince our Eyes

1040

1050

1060

1070

Op'nd we find indeed, and find we know  
 Both Good and Evil, Good lost, and Evil got,  
 Bad Fruit of Knowledge, if this be to know,  
 Which leaves us naked thus, of Honour void,  
 Of Innocence, of Faith, of Puritie,  
 Our wonted Ornaments now soild and staind,  
 And in our Faces evident the signes

1080 Of foul concupiscence ; whence evil store ;  
 Even shame, the last of evils ; of the first  
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face  
 Henceforth of God or Angel, earst with joy  
 And rapture so oft beheld ? those heav'nly shapes  
 Will dazzle now this earthly, with thir blaze  
 Insufferably bright. O might I here  
 In solitude live savage, in some glade  
 Obscur'd, where highest Woods impenetrable  
 To Starr or Sun-light, spread thir umbrage broad,  
 And brown as Evening : Cover me ye Pines,  
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs  
 1090 Hide me, where I may never see them more.

But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
 What best may for the present serve to hide  
 The Parts of each from other, that seem most  
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen,  
 Some Tree whose broad smooth Leaves together  
 And girded on our loyns, may cover round (sowd,  
 Those middle parts, that this new commer, Shame,  
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

1100 So counsel'd hee, and both together went  
 Into the thickest Wood, there soon they chose  
 The Figtree, not that kind for Fruit renown'd,  
 But such as at this day to *Indians* known

In *Malabar* or *Decan* spreds her Armes  
Braunching so broad and long, that in the ground  
The bended Twigs take root, and Daughters grow  
About the Mother Tree, a Pillard shade  
High overarch't, and echoing Walks between ;  
There oft the *Indian* Herdsman shunning heate  
Shelters in coole, and tends his pasturing Herds  
At Loopholes cut through thickest shade : Those  
They gatherd, broad as *Amazonian* Targe, (Leaves  
And with what skill they had, together sowd,  
To gird thir waste, vain Covering if to hide  
Thir guilt and dreaded shame ; O how unlike  
To that first naked Glorie. Such of late  
*Columbus* found th' *American* so girt  
With featherd Cincture, naked else and wilde  
Among the Trees on Iles and woodie Shores.  
Thus fenc't, and as they thought, thir shame in part  
Coverd, but not at rest or ease of Mind,  
They fate them down to weep, nor onely Teares  
Raide at thir Eyes, but high Winds worse within  
Began to rise, high Passions, Anger, Hate,  
Mistrust, Suspicion, Discord, and shook sore  
Thir inward State of Mind, calme Region once  
And full of Peace, now tost and turbulent :  
For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will  
Heard not her lore, both in subjection now  
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath  
Usurping over sovran Reason claimd  
Superior sway : From thus distempred brest,  
*Adam*, estrang'd in-look and alterd stile,  
Speech intermitted thus to *Eve* renewd.  
Would thou hadst heark'nd to my words, & stai'd  
With

1120

1120

1130

With me, as I besought thee, when that strange  
Desire of wandring this unhappy Morn,  
I know not whence posses'd thee; we had then  
Remaind still happie, not as now, despoyld  
Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.

1140 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve  
The Faith they owe; when earnestly they seek  
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to faile.

To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus  
What words have past thy Lips, *Adam* severe, (*Eve*,  
Imput' st thou that to my default, or will  
Of wandering, as thou call' st it, which who knows  
But might as ill have happ'd thou being by,  
Or to thy self perhaps: hadst thou bin there,  
Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd  
Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake;

No ground of enmitie between us known,  
Why hee should mean me ill, or seek to harme.  
Was I to have never parted from thy side?  
As good have grown there still a liveless Rib.  
Being as I am, why didst not thou the Head  
Command me absolutely not to go,  
Going into such danger as thou saidst?  
Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,  
Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
Hadst thou bin firm and fixt in thy dissent,  
Neither had I transgres'd, nor thou with mee.

To whom then first incenst *Adam* repli'd.  
Is this the Love, is this the recompence  
Of mine to thee, ingrateful *Eve*, exprest  
I nmutable when thou wert lost, not I,  
Who might have liv'd and joyd immortal bliss,

Yet

Yet willingly chose rather Death with thee :  
And am I now upbraided, as the cause  
Of thy transgressing? not enough severe,  
It seems, in thy restraint : what could I more?  
I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold  
The danger, and the lurking Enemie  
That lay in wait ; beyond this had bin force,  
And force upon free Will hath here no place.  
But confidence then bore thee on, secure  
Either to meet no danger, or to finde  
Matter of glorious trial ; and perhaps  
I also err'd in overmuch admiring  
What seemd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee, but I true  
That error now, which is become my crime,  
And thou th' accuser. Thus it shall befall  
Him who to worth in Women overtrusting  
Lets her Will rule ; restraint she will not brook,  
And left to her self, if evil thence ensue,  
Shee first his weak indulgence will accuse.  
Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,  
And of thir vain contest appeare'd no end.

1170

1180

*The end of the Eighth Book.*

PARA-



# PARADISE LOST.

## BOOK IX.



Eanwhile the hainous and despightfull act  
Of *Satan* done in Paradise, and  
how  
Hee in the Serpent had perverted  
*Eve*,

Her Husband shee, to taste the fatall fruit,  
Was known in Heav'n; for what can scape the Eye  
Of God All-seeing, or deceave his Heart  
Omniscient, who in all things wise and just,  
Hinder'd not *Satan* to attempt the minde  
Of Man, with strength entire, and free Will arm'd,  
Complete to have discover'd and repulst  
Whatever wiles of Foe or seeming Friend.  
For still they knew, and ought to have still remem-  
The high Injunction not to taste that Fruit, (ber'd  
Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,  
Incurr'd

Incurr'd, what could they less, the penaltie,  
And manifold in sin, deserv'd to fall.  
Up into Heav'n from Paradise in hast  
Th' Angelic Guards ascended, mute and sad  
For Man, for of his state by thisthey knew,  
Much wondring how the subtle Fiend had stoln  
Entrance unseen. Soon as th' unwelcome news  
From Earth arriv'd at Heaven Gate, displeas'd  
All were who heard, dim sadness did not spare  
That time Celestial vilages, yet mixt  
With pitie, violated not thir bliss.

20

About the new-arriv'd, in multitudes  
Th' ethereal People ran, to hear and know  
How all befell : they towards the Throne Supream  
Accountable made haste to make appear  
With righteous plea, thir utmost vigilance,  
And easily approv'd ; when the most High  
Eternal Father from his secret Cloud,  
Amidst in Thunder utter'd thus his voice.

30

Assembl'd Angels, and ye Powers return'd  
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismaid,  
Nor troubl'd at these tidings from the Earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this Tempter cross'd the Gulf from Hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail and speed  
On his bad Errand, Man should be seduc't  
And flatter'd out of all, believing lies  
Against his Maker ; no Decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his Fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free Will, to her own inclining left

40

50

In eevn scale. But fall'n he is, and now  
What rests, but that the mortal Sentence pass  
On his transgression, Death denounc't that day,  
Which he presumes already vain and void,  
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
By somie immediate stroak; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance ere day end.  
Justice shall not return as bountie scorn'd.  
But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee  
Vicegerent Son, to thee I have transferr'd  
All Judgement, whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or  
Easie it may be seen that I intend (Hell.  
Mercie colleague with Justice, sending thee  
60 Mans Friend, his Mediator, his design'd  
Both Ransom and Redeemer voluntarie,  
And destin'd Man himself to judge Man fall'n.

So spake the Father, and unsoulding bright  
Toward the right hand his Glorie, on the Son  
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deltie; he full  
Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd milde.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree,  
Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will  
Supream, that thou in mee thy Son belov'd  
Mayst ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge  
On Earth these thy transgressors, but thou know'st,  
Whoever judg'd, the worst on mee must light,  
When time shall be, for so I undertook  
Before thee; and not repenting, this obtaine  
Of right, that I may mitigate thir doom  
On me deriv'd, yet I shall temper so  
Justice with Mercie, as may illustrate most

Them

Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
 Attendance none shall need, nor Train, where none  
 Are to behold the Judgement, but the judg'd,  
 Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,  
 Convict by flight, and Rebel to all Law  
 Conviction to the Serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant Seat he rose  
 Of high collateral glorie: him Thrones and Powers,  
 Prinedoms, and Dominations ministrant  
 Accompanied to Heaven Gate, from whence  
*Eden* and all the Coast in prospect lay.  
 Down he descended strait; the speed of Gods  
 Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes  
 Now was the Sun in Western cadence low (wing'd.  
 From Noon, and gentle Aires due at thir hour  
 To fan the Earth now wak'd, and usher in  
 The Eevning coole when he from wrauth more  
 Came the mild Judge and Intercessor both (coole  
 To sentence Man: the voice of God they heard  
 Now walking in the Garden, by soft windes  
 Brought to thir Ears, while day declin'd, they heard,  
 And from his presence hid themselves among  
 The thickest Trees, both Man and Wife, till God  
 Approaching, thus to *Adam* call'd aloud.

Where art thou *Adam*, wont with joy to meet  
 My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
 Not pleas'd, thus entertain'd with solitude,  
 Where obvious dutie erewhile appear'd unsought:  
 Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
 Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.  
 He came, and with him *Eve*, more loth, though first  
 To offend, discount'nanc't both, and discompos'd;

80

90

100

110

Love was not in thir looks, either to God  
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despaire,  
Anger, and obstinacie, and hate, and guile.

Whence *Adam* faultring long, thus answer'd brief.

I heard thee in the Garden, and of thy voice  
Affraid, being naked, hid my self. To whom  
The gracious Judge without revile repli'd.

120 My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
But still rejoyc't, how is it now become  
So dreadful to thee? that thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee? hast thou eaten of the Tree  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldest not eat?

To whom thus *Adam* sore beset repli'd.

O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand  
Before my Judge, either to undergoe  
My self the total Crime, or to accuse  
My other self, the partner of my life;  
Whose failing, while her Faith to me remaines,  
130 I should conceal, and not expose to blame  
By my complaint; but strict necessitie  
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,  
Least on my head both sin and punishment,  
However insupportable, be all  
Devolv'd; though should I hold my peace, yet thou  
Wouldst easily detect what I conceale.

This Woman whom thou mad'st to be my help,  
And gav'st me as thy perfet gift, so good,  
So fit, so acceptable, so Divine,  
140 That from her hand I could suspect no ill,  
And what she did, whatever in it self,  
Her doing seem'd to justifie the deed;

Shee gave me of the Tree, and I did eate.

To whom the sovran Presence thus repli'd.  
Was shee thy God, that her thou didst obey  
Before his voice, or was shee made thy guide,  
Superior, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resigne thy Manhood, and the Place  
Wherin God set thee above her made of thee,  
And for thee, whose perfection farr excell'd  
Hers in all real dignitie: Adornd  
She was indeed, and lovely to attract  
Thy Love, not thy Subje~~ction~~, and her Gifts  
Were such as under Government well seem'd,  
Unseemly to beare rule, which was thy part  
And person, hadst thou known thy self aright.

So having said, he thus to *Eve* in few:  
Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?

To whom fad *Eve* with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge  
Bold or loquacious, thus abasht repli'd.

The Serpent me beguil'd and I did eate.  
Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
To Judgement he proceeded on th' accus'd  
Serpent though brute, unable to transferre  
The Guilt on him who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his Creation; justly then accurst,  
As vitiated in Nature: more to know  
Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew.)  
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last  
To Satan first in sin his doom apply'd,  
Though in mysterious terms, judg'd as then best:  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because

150

160

170

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst  
Above all Cattle, each Beast of the Field;  
Upon thy Belly groveling thou shalt goe,  
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy Life.  
180 Between Thee and the Woman I will put  
Enmitie, and between thine and her Seed;  
Her Seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verifi'd  
When *Jesus* son of *Mary* second *Eve*,  
Saw Satan fall like Lightning down from Heav'n,  
Prince of the Aire; then rising from his Grave  
Spoild Principalities and Powers, triumpht  
In open shew, and with ascension bright  
Captivity led captive through the Aire,  
The Realme it self of Satan long usurpt,  
190 Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;  
Evn hee who now foretold his fatal bruise,  
And to the Woman thus his Sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiplie  
By thy Conception; Childeyn thou shalt bring  
In sorrow forth, and to thy Husbands will  
Thine shall submit, hee over thee shall rule.

On *Adam* last thus judgement he pronounc'd.  
Because thou hast heark'nd to the voice of thy  
And eaten of the Tree concerning which (Wife,  
200 I charg'd thee, saying: Thou shalt not eat thereof,  
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in sorrow  
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy Life;  
Thornes also and Thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid, and thou shalt eat th' Herb of th' Field,  
In the sweat of thy Face shalt thou eat Bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground, for thou

Out of the ground wast taken, know thy Birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust returne.

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent  
And th' instant stroke of Death denounc't that day 210  
Remov'd farr off; then pittyng how they stood  
Before him naked to the aire, that now  
Must suffer change, disdain'd no to begin  
Thenceforth the forme of servant to assume,  
As when he wash'd his servants feet, so now  
As Father of his Familie he clad  
Thir nakednes with Skins of Beasts, or slain;  
Or as the Snake with youthful Coate repaid;  
And thought not much to cloath his Enemies :  
Nor hee thir outward onely with the Skins  
Of Beasts, but inward nakednes, much more  
Opprobrious, with his Robe of righteousness,  
Araying cover'd from his Fathers sight.  
To him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
Into his blissful bosom reassum'd  
In glory as of old, to him appeas'd  
All, though all-knowing, what had past with Man  
Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.  
Meanwhile ere thus was sin'd and judg'd on Earth,  
Within the Gates of Hell sate Sin and Death,  
In counterview within the Gates; that now  
Stood open wide, belching oufragéous Flame  
Farr into Chaoē, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
Sin opening, who thus now to Death began.

220

230

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing  
Idlely, while Satan our great Author thrives  
In other Worlds, and happier Seat provides  
For us his offspring deare? It cannot be

But

But that success attends him; if mishap,  
Ere this he had return'd, with fury driv'n  
By his Avenger, since no place like this  
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.  
Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
Wings growing, and Dominion giv'n me large  
Beyond this Deep; whatever drawes me on,  
Or sympathie, or som connatural force  
Powerful at greatest distance to unite  
250 With secret amity things of like kinde  
By secretest conveyance. Thou my Shade  
Inseparable must with mee along:  
For Death from Sin no power can separate.  
But least the difficultie of passing back  
Stay his returne perhaps over this Gulfe  
Impassable, impervious, let us try  
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine  
Not unagreeable, to found a path  
Over this Maine from Hell to that new World  
260 Where Satan now prevales, a Monument  
Of merit high to all th' infernal Host,  
Easing thir passage hence, for intercourse,  
Or transmigration, as thir lot shall lead.  
Nor can I this the way, so strongly drawn  
By this new felt attraction, and instinct.  
Whom thus the meager Shadow answerd soon,  
Goe whither Fate and inclination strong  
Leads thee, I shall not lag behinde, nor erre  
The way, thou leading, such a sent I draw  
270 Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
The favour of Death from all things there that live:  
Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest

Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous Fowl, though many a League remote,  
Against the day of Battel, to a Field,  
Where Armies lie encamp't, come flying, lur'd  
With sent of living Carcasses design'd  
For death, the following day, in bloodie fight.  
So sented the grim Feature, and upturn'd  
His Nostril wide into the murkie Air,  
Sagacious of his Quarrey from so farr.

280

Then Both from out Hell Gates into the waste  
Wide Anarchie of *Chaos*, damp and dark  
Flew divers, & with Power (thir Power was great)  
Hovering upon the Waters; what they met  
Solid or slimie, as in raging Sea  
Tost up and down, together crowded drove  
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell.  
As when two Polar Winds blowing adverse  
Upon the *Cronian* Sea, together drive

290

Mountains of Ice, that stop th' imagin'd way  
Beyond *Petora* Eastward, to the rich  
*Catonian* Coast. The aggregated Soyle  
Death with his Mace petrific, cold and dry,  
As with a Trident smote, and fix't as firm  
As *Delos* floating once; the rest his look  
Botind with *Gorgonian* rigor not to move,  
And with *Asphalitic* flune; broad as the Gate,  
Deep to the Roots of Hell the gather'd beach  
They fasten'd, and the Mole immense wraught on  
Over the foaming Deep high Archt, a Bridge  
Of length prodigious joyning to the Wall

300

Immoveable of this now fenceless world  
Forfeit to Death; from hence a passing broad,  
Smooth, easie, inoffensive down to Hell.  
So, if great things to small may be compar'd,  
Xerxes, the Libertie of Greece to yoke,  
From Susa his Memnonian Palace high  
Came to the Sea, and over *Hellespont*  
310 Bridging his way, *Europe* with *Aisa* joyn'd, (waves.  
And scourg'd with many a stroak th' indignant  
Now had they brought the work by wondrous Art  
Pontifical, a ridge of pendent Rock  
Over the vext Abyss, following the track  
Of *Satan*, to the self same place where hee  
First lighted from his Wing, and landed safe  
From out of *Chaos* to the outside bare  
Of this round World: with Pinns of Adamant  
And Chains they made all fast, too fast they made  
320 And durable; and now in little space  
The Confines met of Empytean Heav'n  
And of this World, and on the left hand Hell  
With long reach Intervall'd; three severall wayes  
In sight, to each of these three places led.  
And now thir way to Earth they had deserv'd,  
To Paradise first tending, when behold  
*Satan* in likeness of an Angel bright  
Betwixt the *Censure* and the *Scorpion* meeting  
His Zenith, while the Sun in *Apries* rule  
330 Disguis'd he came, but thole his Chaldean dest  
Thir Parent loon discern'd, thought in disguised,  
Hee, after Eve seduc't, unloosed, shunk  
Into the Wood fast by, and changing shape  
To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act

By *Eve*, though all unweeting, seconded  
 Upon her Husband, saw thir shame that sought  
 Vain covertures ; but when he saw descend  
 The Son of God to judge them, terrifi'd  
 Hee fled, not hoping to escape, but shun  
 The present, fearing guiltie what his wrauth  
 Might suddenly inflict ; that past, return'd  
 By Night, and listning where the hapless Paire  
 Sate in thir sad discourse, and various plaint,  
 Thence gatherd his own doom, which understood  
 Not instant, but of future time. With joy  
 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,  
 And at the brink of *Chaos*, neer the foot  
 Of this new wondrous Pontifice, unhop't  
 Met who so meet him came, his Ofspring dear.  
 Great joy was at thir meeting, and at sight  
 Of that stupendious Bridge his joy enreas'd.  
 Long hee admiring stood, till *Sin*, his faire  
 Inchanting Daughter, thus the silence broke.

340

350

O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,  
 Thy Trophies, which thou view'st as not thine  
 Thou art thir Author and prime Architect : (own,  
 For I no sooner in my Heart divin'd,  
 My Heart, which by a secret harmonie  
 Still moves with thine, joyn'd in connexion sweet,  
 That thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, which thy  
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt (looks  
 Though distant from thee Worlds between, yet  
 That I must after thee with this thy Sons (felt  
 Such fatal consequence unites us three :  
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,  
 Nor this unvoyageable Gulf obscure

360

370 Detain from following thy illustrious track.  
 Thou hast atchiev'd our libertie, confin'd  
 Within Hell Gates till now, thou us impow'rd  
 To fortifie thus farr, and overlay  
 With this portentous Bridge the dark Abyss.  
 Thine now is all this World, thy vertue hath won  
 What thy hands builded not, thy Wisdom gain'd  
 With odds what Warr hath lost, and fully aveng'd  
 Our foile in Heav'n; here thou shalt Monarch reign,  
 There didst not; there let him still Victor sway,  
 As Battel hath adjudg'd, from this new World  
 Retirg, by his own doom alienated,  
 And henceforth Monarchie with thee divide  
 380 Of all things, parted by th' Empyreal bounds,  
 His Quadrature, from thy Orbicular World,  
 Or trie thee now more dang'rous to his Throne.  
 Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answerd glad.  
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,  
 High proof ye now have giv'n to be the Race  
 Of *satan* (for I glorie in the name,  
 Antagonist of Heav'n's Almighty King.)  
 Amply have merited of me, of all  
 Th' Infernal Empire, that so neer Heav'n's dore  
 390 Triumphal with triumphal act have met,  
 Mine with this glorious Work, & made one Realm  
 Hell and this World, one Realm, one Continent  
 Of easie thorough-fare. Therefore while I  
 Descend through Darkness, on your Rode with ease  
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint  
 With these successes, and with them rejoice,  
 You two this way, among those numerous Orbs  
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend.

There

Paradise lost. Book 9.

There dwell & Reign in bliss, thence on the Earth  
Dominion exercise and in the Aire,  
Chiefly on Man, sole Lord of all declar'd,  
Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.

400

My Substitutes I send ye, and Create  
Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might  
Issuing from mee : on your joyn't vigor now  
My hold of this new Kingdom all depends,  
Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.  
If your joyn't power prevale, th' affaires of Hell  
No detriment need feare, goe and be strong.

So saying he dismiss'd them, they with speed  
Thir course through thickest Constellations held  
Spreading thir bane ; the blasted Starrs lookt wan,  
And Planets, Planet-strook, real Eclips

410

Then sufferd. Th' other way *Satan* went down  
The Causey to Hell Gate ; on either side  
Disparted *Chaos* over built exclaimd,  
And with rebounding surge the barrs assailld,  
That scorn'd his indignation : through the Gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, *Satan* pass'd,  
And all about found desolate ; for those  
Appointed to sit there, had left thir charge,  
Flown to the upper World ; the rest were all  
Farr to the in-land retir'd, about the walls  
Of *Pandamonium*, Citie and proud seate  
Of *Lucifer*, so by allusion call'd,  
Of that bright Starr to *Satan* paragond.

420

There kept thir Watch the Legions, while the  
In Council sat, sollicitous what chance (Grand  
Might intercept thir Emperour sent, so hee  
Departing gave command, and they observ'd.

430

As

As when the *Tartar* from his *Imperial* Foe  
By *Astracan* over the Snowie Plaines  
Retires, or *Buddrian* *Sophi* from the hornes  
Of *Turkis* *Crescent*, leaves all waste beyond  
The Realme of *Alatide*, in his retreate  
To *Tauris* or *Cashemis*: So thense the late  
Heav'n-banisht Host, left desert utmost Hell  
Many a dark League, reduc't in careful Watch  
Round thir *Metropolis*, and now expefting  
Each hour thir great adventur from the search  
Of Forrein *Worlds*: he through the midle upmarks,  
In shew plebeian Angel militant  
Of lowest order, past; and from the dore  
Of that *Plutonian* Hall, invisible  
Ascended his high Throne, which under state  
Of richest texture spred, at th' upperend  
Was plac't in-regal lustre. Down a while  
He sate, and round about him saw unseen:  
At last as from a Cloud his fulgent head  
And shape Starr-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad  
With what perisitive glory since his fall,  
Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd  
At that so sudden blaze the *Stygian* throng  
Bent thir aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
Thir mighty Chief return'd: loud was th' acclaine:  
Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting Peers,  
Rais'd from thir dark *Divan*, and with like joy  
Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand  
Silence, and with these words attention won.  
Thrones, Dominations, Prinedoms, Vertues, Pow-  
For in possession such, not onely of right, (ers,  
I call ye and declare ye now, return'd

Success.

Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
 Triumphant out of this infernal Pit, where I hold  
 Abominable, accurst, the house of woe,  
 And Dungeon of our Tyrant : Now posses,  
 As Lords, a spacious World, to our native Heaven  
 Little inferiour, by my adventure hard,  
 With peril great archievd. Long were to tell  
 What I have don, what suffered, with what paine  
 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
 Of horrible confusion, over which  
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pay'd  
 To expedite your glorious march ; but I will not  
 Told out my uncouth passage, forst to ride  
 Th' untractable Abyss, plung'd in the womb  
 Of uboriginal Nighs, and Obsc'ry wylde, bidding  
 That Jealous of thin secrets, fiercely oppred  
 My journey strange, with horriogous uproar  
 Protesting Pate supcated, thence how I shoud  
 The new created World, which came in Heav'n  
 Long had foretold, a Fabrik wond'ful  
 Of absolute perfection, at herein Mand  
 Plac'd in the Paradise, by out exile,  
 Made happy b' His by fraud I have seduc'd  
 From his Creator, and the more to increas  
 Your wonder, with an Apole, a hythene  
 Offended, whom I entreated, had given up  
 Both his heire and him self his World, to  
 To Sin and Death is pley, and so to us,  
 Without the hazard, labour, or adasite,  
 To range th' undoldwell, and o're the Maner  
 To rule, wsover all he shoud have, twich  
 Free is, and also the hath judg'd, by raght  
 470  
 480  
 490  
 Met

Mee not, but the brute Serpent in whose shape  
Man I deceav'd: that which to mee belongs,  
Is enmity, which he will put between  
Mee and Mankinde; I am to bruise his heel;  
His Seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:  
A World who would not purchase with a bruise,  
Or much more grievous pain? Ye have th' account  
Of my performance: What remaines, ye Gods,  
But up and enter now into full bliss.

500 So having said, a while he stood, expecting  
Thir universal shout and high applause  
To fill his eare, when contrary he hear'd  
On all sides, from innumerable tongues  
A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
Of public scorn; the wonder'd, but not long  
570 Had leisure, wondring at himself now more;  
His Visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,  
His Armes clung to his Ribs, his Leggs entwining  
Each other, till supplanted down he fell  
A monstrous Serpent on his Belly poor,  
Reluctant, but in vaine, a greater power  
Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sp'ld,  
According to his doom: he would have spoke,  
But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue  
To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd  
520 Alike, to Serpents all as accessaries  
To his bold Riot: dreadful was the sight  
Of hissing through the Hall, thick swarming now  
With complicated monsters, head and taile,  
Scorpion and Asp, and *Amphibians* dire,  
Cerastes hornd, *Hydras*, and *Ellops* dear,  
And *Diphas* (Not so thick swar'm'd once the Soil  
Bedrope

Bedropt with blood of *Gorgon*, or the Isle  
*ophiusa*) but still greatest hee the midst,  
Now Dragon grown, larger then whom the Sun  
Ingendered in the *Pythian* Vale on slime,  
Huge *Python*, and his Power no less he seem'd  
Above the rest still to retain ; they all  
Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open Field,  
Where all yet left of that revolted Rout  
Heav'n-fall'n, in station stood or just array,  
Sublime with expectation when to see  
In Triumph issuing forth thir glorious Chief ;  
They saw, but other fight instead, a crowd  
Of ugly Serpents ; horror on them fell,  
And horrid sympathie ; for what they saw,  
They felt themselvs now changing, down thir arms,  
Down fell both Spear and Shield, down they as fast,  
And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form  
Catcht by Contagion, like in punishment,  
As in thir crime. Thus wasth' applausethey meant,  
Turnd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame (stood  
Cast on themselves from thir own mouths. There  
A Grove hard by, sprung up with this thir change,  
His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
Thir penance, laden with fair Fruit, like that  
VVhich grew in Paradise, the bait of *Eve*  
Us'd by the Tempter : on that prospect strange  
Thir earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
For one forbidden Tree a multitude  
Now ris'n, to work them furder woe or shame ;  
Yet parcht with scalding thurst and hunger fierce,  
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,  
But on they rould in heaps, and up the Trees

530

540

550

560 Climbing, sat thicker then the snakie locks  
That curld *Megara* : greedily they pluck'd  
The Frutage fair to fight, like that which grew  
Neer that bituminous Lake where *sodom* flau'd ;  
This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
Deceav'd ; they fondly thinking to allay  
Thir appetite with gust, instead of Fruit  
Chewd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste  
VVith spattering noise rejected : oft they assayd,  
Hunger and thirst constraining, drugd as oft,  
VVith hatefullest disrelish writh'd thir jaws  
VVith foot and cinders fill'd ; so oft they fell  
570 Into the same illusion, not as *Man* (plagu'd  
Whom they triumph'd once lapst. Thus were they  
And worn with Famin, long and ceaslesis hiss,  
Till thir lost shape, permitted, they resum'd,  
Yearly enjoynd, some say, to undergo  
This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
To dash thir pride, and joy for *Man* seduc't.  
However some tradition they dispers'd  
Among the Heathen of thir purchase got,  
580 And Fabl'd how the Serpent, whom they call'd  
*Opbion* with *Eury nome*, the wide-  
Encroaching *Eve* perhaps, had first the rule  
Of high *Olympus*, thence by *Saturn* drivn  
And *Ops*, ere yet *Dilean Jove* was born.  
Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair  
Too soon arriv'd, *Sin* there in power before,  
Once actual, now in body, and to dwell  
Habitual habitant ; behind her *Death*  
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
590 On his pale Horse : to whom *Sin* thus began.

Second of *satan* sprung, all conquering *Death*,  
 What thinkst thou of our Empire now, though  
 With travail difficult, not better farr (earnd  
 Then stil at Hels dark threshold to have sate watch,  
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thy self half starv'd?

Whom thus the Sin-born Monster answerd soon.  
 To mee, who with eternal Famin pine,  
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,  
 These best, where most with ravin I may meet;  
 Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems  
 To stuff this Maw, this vast ughide-bound Corps.

To whom th' incestuous Mother thus repli'd.  
 Thou therefore on these Herbs, and Fruits, & Flours  
 Feed first, on each Beast next, and Fish, and Fowle,  
 No homely morsels, and whatever thing  
 The Sithe of Time mowes down, devour unspar'd,  
 Till I in Man residing through the Race,  
 His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,  
 And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several wayes, 610  
 Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
 All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
 Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing,  
 From his transcendent Seat the Saints among,  
 To those bright Orders uttered thus his voice.

See with what heat these Dogs of Hell advance  
 To waste and havoc yonder VWorld, which I  
 So fair and good created, and had still  
 Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man  
 Let in these wastful Furies, who impute  
 Folly to mee, so doth the Prince of Hell  
 And his Adherents, that with so much ease

600

620

I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem  
To gratifie my scornful Enemies,  
That laugh, as if transported with some fit  
Of Passion, I to them had quitted all,  
At random yeilded up to their misrule ;  
And know not that I call'd and drew them thither  
630 My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth  
Which mans polluting Sin with taint hath shed  
On what was pure, till cramm'd and gorg'd, nigh  
With fuckt and glutted offal, at one fling (burst  
Of thy victorious Arm, well-pleasing Son,  
Both *sin*, and *Death*, and yawning *Grave* at last  
Through *Chaos* hurld, obstruct the mouth of Hell  
For ever, and seal up his ravenous Jawes.  
Then Heav'n and Earth renewd shall be made pure  
To sanctifie that shall receive no staine :  
640 Till then the Curse pronounc't on both precedes.  
Hee ended, and the heav'nly Audience loud  
Sung *Halleluia*, as the sound of Seas,  
Through multitude that sung : Just are thy ways,  
Righteous are thy Decrees on all thy Works ;  
Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,  
Destin'd restorer of Mankind, by whom  
New Heav'n and Earth shall to the Ages rise,  
Or down from Heav'n descend. Such was thir song,  
While the Creator calling forth by name  
650 His mightie Angels gave them several charge,  
As sorted best with present things. The Sun  
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
As might affect the Earth with cold and heat  
Scarce tollerable, and from the North to call

Decrepit

Decrepit Winter, from the South to bring  
Solstitial summers heat. To the blanc Moone  
Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five  
Thir planetarie motions and aspects  
In *Sextile*, *Square*, and *Trine*, and *Opposite*,  
Of noxious efficacie, and when to joyne  
In Synod unbenigne, and taught the fixt  
Thir influence malignant when to showre,  
Which of them rising with the Sun, or falling,  
Should prove tempestuous: To the Winds they set  
Thir corners, when with bluster to confound  
Sea, Aire, and Shoar, the Thunder when to rowle  
With terror through the dark Aereal Hall.  
Some say he bid his Angels turne ascanse  
The Poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more  
From the Suns Axle; they with labour push'd  
Oblique the Centric Globe: Som say the Sun  
Was bid turn Reines from th' Equinoctial Rode  
Like distant breadth to *Taurus* with the Seav'n  
*Atlantick* Sisters, and the *Spartan* Twins  
Up to the *Tropic* Crab; thence down amaine  
By *Leo* and the *Virgin* and the *Scales*,  
As deep as *Capricorne*, to bring in change  
Of Seasons to each Clime; else had the Spring  
Perpetual smil'd on Earth with *Vernal* Flours,  
Equal in Days and Nights, except to those  
Beyond the Polar Circles; to them Day  
Had unbenighted shon, while the low Sun  
To recompence his distance, in thir sight  
Had rounded still th' *Horizon*, and not known  
Or East or West, which had forbid the Snow  
From cold *Eftotiland*, and South as farr

660

670

680

Beneath

Book 9. *Paradise lost.*

Beneath *Magellan*. At that tasted Fruit  
The Sun, as from *Thyestean* Banquet, turn'd  
His course intended; else how had the World  
690 Inhabited, though *Tinless*, more then now,  
Avoided pinching cold and scorching heate?  
These changes in the Heav'ns, though slow, produc'd  
Like change on Sea and Land, fidal blast,  
Vapour, and Mist, and Exhalation hot,  
Corrupt and Pestilent: Now from the North  
Of *Norumbega*, and the *Samoed* shoar  
Bursting thir brazen Dungeon, armd with ice  
And snow and haile and stormie gust and flaw,  
700 *Boreas* and *Cecias* and *Argestes* loud  
And *Thrascias* rend the Woods and Seas upturn'd;  
With adverse blast up-turns them from the South  
*Notus* and *Afer* black with thundrous Clouds  
From *Serraliona*; thwart of these as fierce  
Forth rush the *Levant* and the *Ponent* VVindes  
*Eurus* and *Zephir* with thir lateral noise,  
*Sirocco*, and *Libeccio*. Thus began  
710 Outrage from liveless things; but *Discord* first  
Daughter of *Sin*, among th' irrational,  
Death introduc'd through fierce antipathie:  
Beast now with Beast gan war, & Fowle with Fowle,  
And Fish with Fish; to graze the Herb all leaving,  
Devourd each other; nor stood much in awe  
Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nce grim  
Glar'd on him passing: these were from without  
The growing miseries, which *Adam* saw  
Alreadie in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
To sorrow abandond, but worse felt within,  
And in a troubl'd Sea of passion lost,

Thus

Thus to disbur'd'n sought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happy ! is this the end  
Of this new glorious World, and mee so late  
The Glory of that Glory , who now becom  
Accurst of blessed, hide me from the face  
Of God, whom to behold was then my highth  
Of happiness : yet well, if here would end  
The miserie, I deserv'd it, and would beare  
My own deservings ; but this will not serve ;  
All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,  
Is propagated curse. O voice once heard  
Delightfully, *Encrease and multiply,*  
Now death to heare ! for what can I encrease  
Or multiplie, but curses on my head ?  
Who of all Ages to succeed , but feeling  
The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
My Head, Ill fare our Ancestor impure,  
For this we may thank *Adam* ; but his thanks  
Shall be the execration ; so besides  
Mine own that bide upon me, all from mee  
Shall with a fierce reflux on mee redound,  
On mee as on thir natural center light  
Heavie, though in thir place. O fleeting joyes  
Of Paradise, deare bought with lasting woes !  
Did I request thee, Maker, from my Clay  
To mould me Man, did I sollicite thee  
From darkness to promote me, or here place  
In this delicious Garden ? as my Will  
Concurred not to my being, it were but right  
And equal to reduce me to my dust,  
Desirous to resigne, and render back  
All I receav'd, unable to performe

720

730

740

750

Thy

Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
Sufficient penaltie, why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes? inexplicable  
Thy Justice seems; yet to say truth, too late,  
I thus contest; then should have been refus'd  
Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd:  
Thou didst accept them; wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions? and though God  
760 Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son  
Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,  
Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not:  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
But Natural necessity begot.  
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him, thy reward was of his grace,  
Thy punishment then justly is at his Will.  
Be it so, for I submit, his doom is fair,  
770 That dust I am, and shall to dust returne:  
O welcom hour whenever! why delayes  
His hand to execute what his Decree  
Fixd on this day? why do I overlive,  
Why am I mockt with death, and length'd out  
To deathless pain? how gladly would I meet  
Mortalitie my sentence, and be Earth  
Insensible, how glad would lay me down  
As in my Mothers lap? there I should rest  
And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more  
780 Would Thunder in my ears, no fear of worse  
To mee and to my offspring would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt

Pursues me still, least all I cannot die,  
 Least that pure breath of Life, the Spirit of Man  
 Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish  
 With this corporeal Clod ; then in the Grave,  
 Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
 But I shall die a living Death ? O thought  
 Horrid, if true ! yet why ? it was but breath  
 Of Life that sinn'd ; what dies but what had life  
 And sin ? the Bodie properly hath neither.  
 All of me then shall die : let this appease  
 The doubt, since humane reach no further knows.  
 For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
 Is his wrauth also ? be it, man is not so,  
 But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
 Wrath without end on Man whom Death must end ?  
 Can he make deathless Death ? that were to make  
 Strange contradiction, which to God himself  
 Impossible is held, as Argument  
 Of weakness, not of Power. Will he, draw out,  
 For Anger's sake, finite to infinite  
 In puny man, to satisfie his rigour  
 Satisfid never ; that were to extend  
 His Sentence beyond dust and Natures Law,  
 By which all Causes else according still  
 To the reception of thir matter act,  
 Not to th' extent of thir own Spheare. But say  
 That Death be not one stroak, as I suppos'd,  
 Bereaving sense, but endless miserie  
 From this day onward, which I feel begun  
 Both in me, and without me, and so last  
 To perpetuitie ; Ay me, that fear  
 Comes thundring back with dreadful revolution

790

800

810

On my defensleſſ head, both Death and I  
Am found Eternal, and incorporate both,  
Nor I on my part ſingle, in mee all  
Posteritie stands curſt: Fair Patrimonie  
That I muſt leave ye, Sons; O were I able  
To waste it all my ſelf, and leave ye none!  
So diſinherited how would ye bleſs  
Me now your Curſe! Ah, why ſhould all mankind  
For one mans fault thus guiltleſſ be condemn'd,  
If guiltleſſ? But from mee what can proceed,  
But all corrupt, both Mind and Will deprav'd,  
Not to do onely, but to will the ſame  
With me? how can they acquitted stand  
In fight of God? Him after all Disputes  
Forc't I abſolve: all my evasions vain  
And reaſonings, though through Mazes, lead me ſtill  
But to my own conviction: firſt and laſt  
On mee, mee onely, as the ſourſe and ſpring  
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;  
So might the wrauth, Fond wiſh! couldſt thou ſup,  
That burden heavier then the Earth to bear, (part  
Then all the World much heavier, though diſdividē  
With that bad Woman? Thus what thou deſir'ſt,  
And what thou fearſt, alike deſtroyes all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miſerable  
Beyond all paſt example and future,  
To *Satan* onely like both crime and doom.  
O Conscience, into what Abyſs of fears  
And horrors haſt thou driv'n me; out of which  
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!  
Thus *Adam* to himſelf lamented loud  
Through the ſtill Night, not now, as ere man fell,  
Whol-

Wholsom and cool, and mild, but with black Air  
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,  
Which to his evil Conscience represented  
All things with double terror : On the ground  
Outstretcht he lay, on the cold ground, and oft  
Curs'd his Creation, Death as oft accus'd  
Of tardie execution, since denounc't  
The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,  
Said hee, with one thrice acceptable stroke  
To end me ? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice Divine not hast'n to be just ?  
But Death comes not at call, Justice Divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.  
O Woods, O Fountains, Hillocks, Dales and Bowrs,  
VVith other echo late I taught your Shades  
To answer, and resound farr other Song.  
VVhom thus afflicted when sad *Eve* beheld,  
Desolate where she sate, approaching nigh,  
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd :  
But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

850

860

870

Out of my sight, thou Serpent, that name best  
Befits thee with him leagu'd, thy self as false  
And hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour Serpentine may shew  
Thy inward fraud, to warn all Creatures from thee  
Henceforth; least that too heav'nly form, pretended  
To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee  
I had persisted happie, had not thy pride  
And wandring vanitie, when left was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen  
Though by the Devil himself, him overweening

880 To over-reach, but with the Serpent meeting  
Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee,  
To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,  
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,  
And understood not alwas but a shew  
Rather then solid vertu, all but a Rib  
Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,  
More to the part sinister from me drawn,  
Well if thrown out, as supernumerarie  
To my just number found. O why did God,  
Creator wise, that peopl'd highest Heav'n  
With Spirits Masculine, create at last  
This noveltie on Earth, this fair defect  
Of Nature, and not fill the World at once  
With Men as Angels without Feminine,  
Or find some other way to generate  
Mankind? this mischief had not then befall'n,  
And more that shall befall, innumerable  
Disturbances on Earth through Femal snares,  
And straight conjunction with this Sex: for either  
He never shall find out fit Mate, but such  
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake,  
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd  
By a farr worfe, or if she love, withheld  
By Parents, or his happiest choice too late  
Shall meet, alreadie linkt and Wedlock-bound  
To a fell Adversarie, his hate or shame:  
Which infinite calamitie shall cause  
To Human life, and household peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd, but Eve  
Not so repulst, with Tears that ceas'd not flowing,  
And

And tresses all disorderd, at his feet.  
 Fell humble, and embracing them, besought  
 His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.  
 For sake me not thus, *Adam*, witness Heav'n  
 What love sincere, and reverence in my heart  
 I beare thee, and unweeting have offended,  
 Unhappilie deceav'd; thy suppliant  
 I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,  
 Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
 Thy counsel in this uttermost distres,  
 My onely strength and stay: forlorn of thee,  
 Whither shall I betake me, where subdist?

920

While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
 Between us two let there be peace, both joyning,  
 As joyn'd in injuries, one enmitie  
 Against a Foe by doom express assign'd us,  
 That cruel Serpent: On me exercise not  
 Thy hatred for this miserie befall'n,  
 On me already lost, mee then thy self  
 More miserable; both have sin'd, but thou  
 Against God onely, I against God and thee,  
 And to the place of judgement will return,  
 There with my cries importune Heaven; that all  
 The sentence from thy head remov'd may light  
 On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,  
 Mee mee onely just object of his ire.

930

She ended weeping, and her lowlie plight,  
 Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault  
 Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in *Adam* wraught  
 Commiseration; soon his heart relented  
 Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,  
 Now at his feet submissive in distress,

940

Creature so faire his reconcilement seeking,  
 His counsel whom she had displeas'd, his aide ;  
 As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,  
 And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

950

Unwarie, and too desirous, as before,  
 So now of what thou knowst not, who desir'st  
 The punishment all on thy self ; alas,  
 Beare thine own first, ill able to sustaine  
 His full wrauth whose thou feelst as yet lest part,  
 And my displeasure bearst so ill. If Prayers  
 Could alter high Decrees, I to that place  
 Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
 That on my head all might be visited,  
 Thy frailtie and infirmer Sex forgiv'n,  
 To me committed and by me expos'd.  
 But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame  
 Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive  
 In offices of Love, how we may light'n  
 Each others burden in our share of woe ;  
 Since this days Death denounc't, if ought I see,  
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac't evill,  
 A long days dying to augment our paine,  
 And to our Seed (O haples Seed !) deriv'd.

960

970

To whom thus *Eve*, recovering heart, repli'd.  
*Adam*, by sad experiment I know  
 How little weight my words with thee can finde,  
 Found so erroneous, thence by just event  
 Found so unfortunate ; nevertheless,  
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place  
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regaine  
 Thy Love, the sole contentment of my heart,  
 Living or dying from thee I will not hide

What

What thoughts in my unquiet brest are ris'n,  
Tending to som relief of our extremes,  
Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,  
As in our evils, and of easier choice.

If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd  
By Death at last, and miserable it is

140  
980

To be to others cause of misery,  
Our own begotten, and of our Loines to bring  
Into this cursed World a woful Race,  
That after wretched Life must be at last  
Food for so foule a Monster, in thy power  
It lies, yet ere Conception to prevent  
The Race unblest, to being yet unbegot.

Childless thou art, Childless remaine :

So Death shall be deceav'd his glut, and with us two 990  
Be forc'd to satisfie his Rav'ous Maw.

But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
From Loves due Rites, Nuptial embraces sweet,  
And with desire to languish without hope,  
Before the present object languishing  
With like desire, which would be miserie  
And torment less then none of what we dread,  
Then both our selves and Seed at once to free  
From what we fear for both, let us make short,  
Let us seek Death, or hee not found, supply  
With our own hands his Office on our selves ;  
Why stand we longer shivering under feares,  
That shew no end but Death, and have the power,  
Of many wayes to die the shortest choosing,

1000

Destruction

Destruction with destruction to destroy.

She ended heer, or vehement despaire

Broke off the rest ; so much of Death her thoughts  
Had entertaind, as di'd her Cheeks with pale.

1010 But *Adam* with such counsel nothing sway'd,

1020 To better hopes his more attentive minde  
Labouring had rais'd, and thus to *Eve* repli'd.

*Eve*, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee somthing more sublime

And excellent then what thy minde conteimes ;

But self-destruction therefore saught, refutes  
That excellence thought in thee, and implies,

Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret

For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.

1020 Or if thou covet death, as utmost end  
Of miserie, so thinking to evade

The penaltie pronounc't, doubt not but God  
Hath wiser arm'd his vengeful ire then so

To be forestall'd ; much more I fear least Death

So snatcht will not exempt us from the paine

We are by doom to pay ; rather such acts

Of contumacie will provoke the highest

To make death in us live : Then let us seek

Som safer resolution, which methinks

1030 I have in view, calling to minde with heed  
Part of our Sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise

The Serpents head ; piteous amends, unless

Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand Foe

*Satan*, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd

Against us this deceit : to crush his head

Would be revenge indeed ; which will be lost

By

By death brought on our selves, or childless days  
Resolv'd, as thou propofest; so our Foe  
Shall ſcape his punishment ordain'd, and wee  
Instead ſhall double ours upon our heads.

1040

No more be mention'd then of violence  
Againſt our ſelves, and wilful barrenneſſ,  
That cuts us off from hope, and favours onely  
Rancor and pride, impatience and deſpite,  
Reluctance againſt God and his just yoke  
Laid on our Necks. Remember with what mild  
And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd  
Without wrauth or reviling; wee expected  
Immediate diſſolution, which we thought

1050

Was meant by Death that day, when lo, to thee  
Pains onely in Child-bearing were foretold,  
And bringing forth, ſoon recompenc't with joy,  
Fruit of thy Womb: On mee the Curse aſſlope  
Glanc'd on the ground, with labour I muſt earne  
My bread; what harm? Idleness had bin worse;  
My labour will ſustain me; and leaſt Cold

Or Heat ſhould injure us, his timely care  
Hath unbesought provided, and his hands  
Cloath'd us unwortheſſie, pitying while he judg'd;  
How much more, if we pray him, will his ear  
Be open, and his heart to pitie incline,  
And teach us further by what means to ſhun  
Th' inclement Seasons, Rain, Ice, Hail and Snow,  
Which now the Skie with various Face begins  
To ſhew us in this Mountain, while the Winds  
Blow moist and keen, ſhittering the graceful locks  
Of theſe fair ſpreaſing Trees; which bids us ſeek

1060

O o

Some

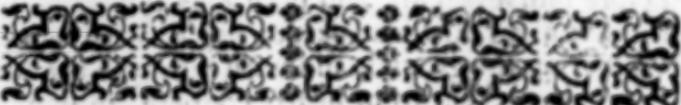
1070 Som better shroud, som better warmth to cherish  
Our Limbs benumm'd, ere this diurnal Starr  
Leave cold the Night, how we his gather'd beams  
Reflected, may with matter sere foment,  
Or by collision of two bodies grinde  
The Air attrite to Fire, as late the Clouds  
Justling or pusht with Winds rude in thir shock  
Tine the slant Lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n  
Kindles the gummie bark of Firr or Pine, (down  
And sends a comfortable heat from farr,  
Which might supplie the Sun : such Fire to use,  
And what may else be remedie or cure  
1080 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,  
Hee will instruct us praying, and of Grace  
Beseeching him, so as we need not fear  
To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd  
By him with many comforts, till we end  
In dust, our final rest and native home.  
What better can we do, then to the place  
Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall  
Before him reverent, and there confess  
Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears  
1090 VVatering the ground, and with our sighs the Air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.  
Undoubtedly he will relent and turn  
From his displeasure ; in whose look serene,  
VVhen angry most he seem'd and most severe,  
VVhat else but favor, grace, and mercie shon ?  
So spake our Father penitent, nor *Eve*  
Felt less remorse : they forthwith to the place

Repairing where he judg'd them prostrate fell  
Before him reverent, and both confess'd  
Humbly thir faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears  
VVatering the ground, and with thir sighs the Air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

1100

*The End of the Ninth Book.*

O o 2 . P A R A -



# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK X.

---

10 A. M. A. M. Hūs they in lowliest plight repentant  
stood  
Praying, for from the Mercie-seat  
above  
Prevenient Grace descending had remov'd  
The stonie from thir hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerat grow instead, that sighs now breath'd  
Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer  
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight  
Then loudest Oratorie : yet thir port  
Not of mean suiters, nor important less  
Seem'd thir Petition, then when th' ancient Pair  
In Falstyd, less and less, then these,  
*Descalion* and chaste *Pyrrha* to restore  
The Race of Mankind drownd, before the Shrine  
Of *Themis* stood devout. To Heav'n thir prayers  
Flew

Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious windes  
Blow'n vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd  
Dimensionless through Heav'ny dores; then clad  
With incense, where the Golden Altar fum'd,  
By thir great Intercessor, came in sight  
Before the Fathers Throne: Then the glad Son  
Presenting, thus to intercede began.

20

See Father, what first fruits on Earth are sprung  
From thy implanted Grace in Man, these Sighs  
And Prayers, which in this Golden Censer, mixt  
With Incense, I thy Priest before thee bring,  
Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed  
Sow'n with contrition in his heart, then those  
Which his own hand manuring all the Trees  
Of Paradise could have produc't, ere fall'n  
From innocence. Now therefore bend thine eare  
To supplication, heare his sighs though mute;  
Unskilful with what words to pray let me,  
Interpret for him, mee his Advocate  
And propitiation, all his works on mee  
Good or not good ingraft, my Merit those  
Shall perfet, and for these my Death shall pay.  
Accept mee, and in mee from these receave  
The smell of peace toward Mankinde, let him live  
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days  
Number'd, though sad, till Death, his doom (which I  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)  
To better life shall yeeld him, where with mee  
All my redeeme'd may dwell in joy and blis,  
Made one with mee as I with thee am one.

30

To whom in this Father, without Clink, serene.  
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,

40

Obtain,

Obtain, all thy request was my Decree :  
But longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
The Law I gave to Nature him forbids :  
50 Those pure immortal Elements that know  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,  
Eject him tainted now, and purge him off  
As a distemper, gross to aire as gross,  
And mortal food, as may dispose him best  
For dissolution wrought by Sin, that first  
Distemperd all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts  
Created him endowd, with Happiness  
And Immortalitie : that fondly lost,  
60 This other serv'd but to eternize woe ;  
Till I provided Death ; so Death becomes  
His final remedie, and after Life  
Tri'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd  
By Faith and faithful works, to second Life,  
Wak't in the renovation of the just,  
Resignes him up with Heav'n and Earth renewd.  
But let us call to Synod all the Blest  
Through Heav'n's wide bounds; from them I will not  
70 My judgments, how with Mankind I proceed, (hide  
As how with peccant Angels late they saw ;  
And in thir state, though firm, stood more confirmd.  
He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
To the bright Minister that watchd, hee blew  
His Trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps  
When God descended, and perhaps once more  
To sound at general Doom. Th' Angelic blast  
Filld all the Regions : from thir blisful Bowers  
Of *Amarantin* Shade, Fountain or Spring,

By the waters of Life, where ere they fate  
In fellowships of joy: the Sons of Light  
Hasted, resorting to the Summons high,  
And took thir Seats; till from his Throne supream  
Th' Almighty thus pronounced his sovran Will.

80

O Sons, like one of us Man is become  
To know both Good and Evil, since his taste  
Of that defended Fruit; but let him boast  
His knowledge of Good lost, and Evil got,  
Happier, had it suffice'd him to have known  
Good by it self, and Evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prayes contrite,  
My motions in him, longer then they move,  
His heart I know, how variable and vain  
Self-left. Least therefore his now bolder hand  
Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,  
And live for ever, dream at least to live  
For ever, to remove him I decree,  
And send him from the Garden forth to Till  
The Ground whence he was taken, fitter soile.

90

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,  
Take to thee from among the Cherubim  
Thy choice of flaming Warriours, least the Fiend  
Or in behalf of Man, or to invade  
Vacant possession som new trouble raise:  
Hast thee, and from the Paradise of God  
Without remorse drive out the sinful Pair,  
From hallowd ground th' unholie, and denounce  
To them and to thir Progenie from thence  
Perpetual banishment. Yet least they faint  
At the sad Sentence rigorously urg'd,  
For I behold them soft'nd and with tears

100

110

Bewall-

Bewailing thir excess, all terror hide.  
 If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
 Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveale  
 To *Adam* what shall come in future dayes,  
 As I shall thee enlighten, intermix  
 My Cov'nant in the Womans seed renewd;  
 So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace:  
 And on the East side of the Garden place,  
 Where entrance up from *Eden* easiest climbs,  
 Cherubic watch, and of a Sword the flame  
 Wide waving, all approach farr off to fright,  
 And guard all passage to the Tree of Life:  
 Least Paradise a receptacle prove  
 To Spirits foule, and all my Trees thir prey,  
 With whose stol'n Fruit Man once more to delude.

120 He ceas'd; and th' Archangelic Power prepar'd  
 For swift descent, with him the Cohort bright  
 Of watchful Cherubim; four faces each  
 Had, like a double *Janus*, all thir shape  
 130 Spangl'd with eyes more numerous then those  
 Of *Argus*; and more wakeful then to drouze,  
 Charm'd with *Arcadian* Pipe, the Pastoral Reed  
 Of *Hermes*, or his opiate Rod. Mean while  
 To resalute the World with sacred Light  
*Leucothea* wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalm'd  
 The Earth, when *Adam* and first Matron *Eve*  
 Had ended now thir Orisons, and found,  
 Strength added from above, new hope to spring  
 Out of despaire, joy, but with fear yet linkt,  
 Which thus to *Eve* his welcōme words renewd.

140 *Eve*, easily may Faith admit, that all  
 The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends  
 But

But that from us ought should ascend to Heav'n  
So prevalent as to concerne the mind  
Of God high-blest, or to incline his will,  
Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will Prayer,  
Or one short sigh of humane breath, up-borne  
Ev'n to the Seat of God. For since I saught  
By Prayer th' offended Deitie to appease,  
Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart,  
Muthought I saw him placable and mild,  
Bending his eare ; persuasione in me grew  
That I was heard with favour ; peace returnd  
Home to my breft, and to my memorie  
His promise, that thy Seed shall bruise our Foe ;  
Which then not minded in dismay, yet now  
Assures me that the bitterness of death  
Is past, and we shall live. Whence Haile to thee,  
*Eve* rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,  
Mother of all things living, since by thee  
Man is to live, and all things live for Man.

To whom thus *Eve* with sad demeanour meek.  
Ill worthie I such title should belong  
To me transgressour, who for thee ordaind  
A help, became thy snare ; to mee reproach  
Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise :  
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
That I who first brought Death on all, am grac't  
The course of life ; next favourable thou,  
Who highly thus to entitle me voutsafst,  
Farr other name deserving. But the Field  
To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,  
Though after sleepless Night ; for see the Morn,  
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins

150

160

170

Her rosie progress smiling ; let us forth,  
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
 Wherere our days work lies, though now enjoind  
 Laborious, till day droop ; while here we dwell,  
 What can be toilsom in these pleasant Walkes ?  
 180 Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content.

So spake, so wish'd much-humbl'd Eve, but Fate  
 Subscrib'd not ; Nature first gave Signs, imprest  
 On Bird, Beast, Aire, Aire suddenly eclips'd  
 After short blush of Morn ; nigh in her sight  
 The Bird of Jove, stoopt from his aerie tour,  
 Two Birds of gayest plume before him drove :  
 Down from a Hill the Beast that reigns in Woods,  
 First Hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,  
 Goodliest of all the Forrest, Hart and Hinde ;  
 Direct to th' Eastern Gate was bent thir flight.  
 190 Adam observ'd, and with his Eye the chase  
 Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.

O Eve, some furder change awaits us nigh,  
 Which Heav'n by these mute signs in Nature shews  
 Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn  
 Us haply too secure of our discharge  
 From penaltie, because from death releast  
 Some days ; how long, and what till then our life,  
 Who knows, or more then this, that we are dust,  
 And thither must return and be no more.  
 200 VVhy else this double object in our sight  
 Of flight pursu'd in th' Air and ore the ground  
 One way the self-same hour ? why in the East  
 Darknes ere Dayes mid-course, and Morning light  
 More orient in yon VVestern Cloud that draws  
 O're the bleyw Firmament a radiant white,

And

And slow descends, with somthing heav'nly fraught.

He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly Bands  
Down from a Skie of Jasper lighted now  
In Paradise, and on a Hill made alt,  
A glorious Apparition, had not doubt  
And carnal fear that day dimm'd *Adams* eye.  
Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
*Jacob* in *Mahansim*, where he saw  
The field Pavilion'd with his Guardians bright ;  
Nor that which on the flaming Mount appeerd  
In *Dotbam*, cover'd with a Camp of Fire,  
Against the *Syrian* King, who to surprize  
One man, Assassin-like had levied Warr,  
Warr unproclam'd. The Princely Hierarch  
In thir bright stand, there left his Powers to seise  
Possession of the Garden ; hee alone,  
To finde where *Adam* shelterd, took his way ,  
Not unperceav'd of *Adam*, who to *Eve*,  
While the great Visitant approachd, thus spake.

*Eve*, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
Of us will soon determin, or impose  
New Laws to be oblev'd ; for I descrie  
From yonder blazing Cloud that veils the Hill  
One of the heav'nly Host, and by his Gate  
None of the meaneest, some great Potentate  
Or of the Thrones above, such Majestie  
Inveits him coming ; yet not terrible,  
That I should fear, nor sociably mild,  
As *Raphael*, that I should much confide.  
But solemn and sublime, whom not to offend,  
With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.  
He ended ; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,

210

220

230

Not in his shape Celestial, but as Man  
 240 Clad to meet Man; over his lucid Armes  
 A militarie Vest of purple flowd  
 Livelier then *Melibean*, or the graine  
 Of *Sarra*, worn by Kings and Hero's old  
 In time of Truce; *Iris* had dipt the wooff;  
 His starrie Helme unbuckl'd shew'd him prime  
 In Manhood where Youth ended; by his side  
 As in a glistering *Zodiac* hung the Sword,  
 Satans dire dread, and in his hand the Spear.  
*Adam* bowd low, hee Kingly from his State  
 250 Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declar'd.  
*Adam*, Heav'n's high behest no Preface needs:  
 Sufficient that thy Prayers are heard, and Death,  
 Then due by sentence when thou didst transgres,  
 Defeated of his seizure many dayes  
 Giv'n thee of Grace, wherein thou may'st repent,  
 And one bad aſt with many deeds well done  
 Mayſt cover: well may then thy Lord appeas'd  
 Redeem thee quite from Deaths rapacious claimes;  
 But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
 260 Permits not; to remove thee I am come,  
 And send thee from the Garden forth to till  
 The ground whence thou wast tak'n, fitter Soile.  
 He added not, for *Adam* at the newes  
 Heart-strook with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
 That all his ſenſes bound; *Eve*, who unſeen  
 Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
 Discover'd ſoon the place of her retire.  
 O unexſpected ſtroke, worse then of Death!  
 Must I thus leave thee Paradise? thus leave  
 270 Thee Native Soile, theſe happy Walks and Shades,  
 Fit

Fit haunt of Gods? where I had hope to spend,  
Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
That must be mortal to us both. O flours,  
That never will in other Climate grow,  
My early visitation, and my last  
At Eev'n, which I bred up with tender hand  
From the first op'ning bud, and gave ye Names,  
Who now shall reare ye to the Sun, or ranke  
Your Tribes, and water from th' ambrosial Fount?  
Thee lastly nuptial Bowre, by mee adornd  
With what to light or smell was sweet; from thee  
How shall I part, and whither wander down  
Into a lower World, to this obscure  
And wilde, how shall we breath in other Aire  
Less pure, accustomd to immortal Fruits?

280

Whom thus the Angel interrupted milde.  
Lament not *Eve*, but patiently resigne  
What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,  
Thus over fond, on that which is not thine;  
Thy going is not lonely, with thee goes  
Thy Husband, him to follow thou art bound;  
Where he abides, think there thy native soile.

290

*Adam* by this from the cold sudden damp  
Recovering, and his scatterd spirits returnd,  
To *Michael* thus his humble words addresd.

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd  
Of them the Highest, for such of shape may seem  
Prince above Princes, gently hast thou tould  
Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
And in performing end us; what besides  
Of sorrow and dejection and despair  
Our fraikie can sustain, thy tidings bring,

300

Depart-

Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
Recess, and onely consolation left .  
Familiar to our eyes , all places else  
Inhospitable appear and desolate,  
Nor knowing us nor known : and if by prayer  
Incessant I could hope to change the will  
Of him who all things can, I would not cease  
To wearie him with my assiduous cries :  
But prayer against his absolute Decree  
No more availes then breath against the wind,  
Blown stifling back on him that breaths it forth :  
Therefore to his great bidding I submit.  
This most afflicts me, that departing hence,  
As from his face I shall be hid, deprivd  
His blessed count'nce ; here I could frequent,  
With worship, place by place where he voutsaf'd  
Presence Divine, and to my Sons relate ;  
320 On this Mount he appeerd, under this Tree  
Stood visible , among these Pines his voice  
I heard, here with him at this Fountain talk'd :  
So many grateful Altars I would reare  
Of graffie Terfe, and pile up every Stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memorie,  
Or monument to Ages, and thereon  
Offer sweet smelling Gumms & Fruits and Flours :  
In yonder nether World where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?  
330 For though I fled him angrie, yet recall'd  
To life prolongd and promisd Race, I now  
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts  
Of glory, and farr off his steps adore.  
To whom thus *Michael* with regard benigne.

Adam, thou know'st Heav'n his, and all the Earth,  
Not this Rock onely ; his Omnipresence fills  
Land, Sea, and Aire, and every kinde that lives,  
Fomented by his virtual power and warmd :  
All th' Earth he gave thee to posses and rule,  
No despicable gift ; furnishe not then  
His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
Of Paradise or *Eden* : this had been  
Perhaps thy Capital Seate, from whence had spred  
All generations, and had hither come  
From all the ends of th' Earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee thir great Progenitor.  
But this præminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on eeven ground now with thy Sons :  
Yet doubt not but in Vallie and in Plaine  
God is as here, and will be found alike  
Present, and of his presence many a signe  
Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
With goodness and paternal Love, his Face  
Expres, and of his steps the track Divine.  
Which that thou mayst beleeve, and be confirmd,  
Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent  
To shew thee what shall come in future dayes  
To thee and to thy Olspring ; good with bad  
Expect to hear, supernal Grace contending  
With sinfulness of Men ; thereby to learn  
True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
And pious sorrow, equally enur'd  
By moderation either state to heire,  
Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead  
Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure  
Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend

340

350

360

This

370

This Hill ; let *Eve* (for I have drencht her eyes)  
 Here sleep below while thou to foresight wak'st,  
 As once thou slep'st, while Shee to life was formd.

To whom thus *Adam* gratefully repli'd.

Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path  
 Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heav'n submit,  
 However chast'ning, to the evil turne  
 My obvious breast, arming to overcom  
 By suffering, and earne rest from labour won,  
 If so I may attain. So both ascend

380

In the Vilions of God : It was a Hill  
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top  
 The Hemisphere of Earth in clearest Ken  
 Stretcht out to amplest reach of prospect lay.  
 Not higher that Hill nor wider looking round,  
 Whereon for different cause the Tempter set  
 Our second *Adam* in the Wilderness,  
 To shew him all Earths Kingdome and thir Glory.  
 His Eye might there command wherever stood  
 City of old or modern Fame, the Seat  
 Of mightiest Empire, from the destind Walls  
 Of *Cambalu*, seat of *Cathaiian Can*

390

And *Samarchand* by *Oxus*, *Temirs* Throne,  
 To *Paquin* of *Sinean* Kings, and thence  
 To *Agra* and *Labor* of great *Mogul*  
 Down to the golden *Chersonese*, or where  
 The *Persian* in *Ecbatan* late, or since  
 In *Hispahan*, or where the *Russian Ksar*  
 In *Mosco*, or the Sultan in *Bizance*,  
 Turchestan-born ; nor could his eye not ken  
 Th' Empire of *Negus* to his utmost Port  
*Ercoco* and the less Maritime Kings

Mombaza, and *Quilas*, and *Melind*,  
 And *Sofala* thought *Ophir*, to the Realme  
 Of *Congo*, and *Angola* fardest South ;  
 Or thence from *Niger* Flood to *Atlas* Mount  
 The Kingdoms of *Almansor*, *Fez* and *Sue*,  
*Morocco* and *Algiers*, and *Tremisen* ;  
 On *Europe* thence, and where *Rome* was to sway  
 The VWorld : in Spirit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich *Mexico* the seat of *Motezume*,  
 And *Cusco* in *Peru*, the richer seat  
 Of *Atabalipa*, and yet unspoil'd  
*Guiana*, whose great Citie *Geryons* Sons  
 Call *El Dorado* : but to nobler sights  
*Michael* from *Adams* eyes the Filme remov'd  
 VVhich that false Fruit that promis'd clearer sight  
 Had bred ; then purg'd with *Euphrasie* and *Rue*  
 The visual Nerve, for he had much to see ;  
 And from the VWell of Life three drops instill'd.  
 So deep the power of these Ingredients pierc'd,  
 Eevn to the immost seat of mental sight,  
 That *Adam* now enforc't to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down and all his Spirits became intransit :  
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

*Adam*, now ope thine eyes, and first behold  
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought  
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd  
 Th' excepted Tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,  
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive  
 Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he op'd, and beheld a field,  
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were Sheaves

400

410

420

430

New reapt, the other part sheep-walks and foulds ;  
 Ith' midst an Altar as the Land-mark stood  
 Rustic, of graffie sord ; thither anon  
 A sweatie Reaper from his Tillage brought  
 First Fruits, the green Eare, and the yellow Sheaf,  
 Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a Shepherd next  
 More meek came with the Firstlings of his Flock  
 Choicest and best ; then sacrificing, laid  
 The Inwards and thir Fat, with Incense strew'd,  
 440 On the cleft Wood, and all due Rites perform'd.  
 His Offring soon propitious Fire from Heav'n  
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steame ;  
 The others not, for his was not sincere ;  
 Whereat hee inlie rag'd, and as they talk'd,  
 Smote him into the Midriff with a stone  
 That beat out life ; he fell, and deadly pale  
 Groand out his Soul with gushing bloud effus'd.  
 Much at that sight was *Adam* in his heart  
 Dismaid, and thus in haste to th' Angel cri'd.  
 450 O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n  
 To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd ;  
 Is Piety thus and pure Devotion paid ?  
 T' whom *Michael* thus, hee also mov'd, repli'd.  
 These two are Brethren, *Adam*, and to come  
 Out of thy loyns, th' unjust the just hath slain,  
 For envie that his Brothers Offering found  
 From Heav'n acceptance ; but the bloodie Fact  
 Will be aveng'd, and th' others Faith approv'd  
 Loose no reward, though here thou see him die,  
 460 Rowling in dust and gore. To which our Sire  
 Alas, both for the deed and for the cause  
 But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way  
 world

I must return to native dust? O sight  
Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,  
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!

To whom thus *Michael*. Death thou hast seen  
In his first shape on man; but many shapes  
Of Death, and many are the wayes that lead  
To his grim Cave, all dismal; yet to sense  
More terrible at th' entrance then within.

Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,  
By Fire, Flood, Famin, by Intemperance more  
In Meats and Drinks, which on the Earth shal bring  
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
Before thee shall appear; that thou mayst know  
What miserie th' inabstinence of *Eve*

Shall bring on men. Immediately a place  
Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noysom, dark,  
A Lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid  
Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies  
Of gasty Spasim, or racking torture, qualmes  
Of heart-sick Agonie, all feavorous kinds,  
Convulsions, Epilepsies, fierce Catarrhs,  
Intestin Stone and Ulcer, Colic pangs,

Dropsies, and Asthma's, and Joint-racking Rheums.  
Dire was the tossing, deep the groans, despair  
Tended the sick busiest from Couch to Couch;  
And over them triumphant Death his Dart

Shook, but delaide to strike, though oft invok't  
With vows, as thir chief good, and final hope.  
Sight so deform what heart of Rock could long  
Drie-ey'd behold? *Adam* could not, but wept,  
Though not of Woman born; compassion quell'd  
His best of Man, and gave him up to tears

470

480

490

3 lines  
added  
in late  
edition

Book 10. *Paradise lost.*

A space, till firmer thoughts restraint excels,  
And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

O miserable Mankind, to what fall  
Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd !

500 Better end heer unborn. Why is life giv'n  
To be thus wrested from us? rather why  
Obtruded on us thus? who if we knew  
What we receive, would either not accept  
Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,  
Glad to be so dismisse in peace. Can thus  
Th' Image of God in man created once  
So goodly and erect, though faultie since,  
To such unsightly sufferings be debas't  
Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,  
Retaining still Divine similitude  
510 In part, from such deformities be free,  
And for his Makers Image sake exempt?

Thir Makers Image, answerd *Michael*, then  
Forsook them, when themselves they villifi'd  
To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took  
His Image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,  
Inductive mainly to the sin of *Eve*.

Therefore so abject is thir punishment,  
Disfiguring not Gods likeness, but thir own,  
Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd  
520 While they pervert pure Natures healthful rules  
To loathsom sicknes, worthily, since they  
Gods Image did not reverence in themselves.

I yeild it just, said *Adam*, and submit.  
But is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To Death, and mix with our connatural dust?

There

There is, said *Michael*, if thou well observe  
 The rule of not too much, by temperance taught  
 In what thou eatst and drinkst, seeking from thence  
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,  
 Till many years over thy head return :  
 So maist thou live, till like ripe Fruit thou drop  
 Into thy Mothers lap, or be with ease  
 Gatherd, not harshly pluckt, for death mature :  
 This is old age ; but then thou must outlive  
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will  
 To witherd weak & gray; thy Senses then (change  
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgoe,  
 To what thou hast, and for the Aire of youth  
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reigne  
 A melancholly damp of cold and dry  
 To waigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
 The Balme of Life. To whom our Ancestor.

Henceforth I flie not Death, nor would prolong  
 Life much, bent rather how I may be quit  
 Fairest and easiest of this combrous charge,  
 Which I must keep till my appointed day  
 Of rendring up. *Michael* to him repli'd.

Nor love thy Life, nor hate ; but what thou livst  
 Live well, how long or short permit to Heav'n :  
 And now prepare thee for another fight.

He lookd and saw a spacious Plaine, whereon  
 Were Tents of various hue ; by some were herds  
 Of Cattel grazing : others, whence the sound  
 Of Instruments that made melodious chime  
 Was heard, of Harp and Organ ; and who moovd  
 Thir stops and chords was seen : his volant touch  
 Instinct through all proportions low and high

530

540

550

Fled

560 Fled and pursu'd transverse the resonant fugue,  
In other part stood one who at the Forge  
Labouring, two massie clods of Iron and Brass  
Had melted (whether found where casual fire  
Had wasted woods on Mountain or in Vale,  
Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot  
To som Caves mouth, or whether wash't by stream  
From underground) the liquid Ore he dreind  
Into fit moulds prepar'd; from which he form'd  
First his own Tooles; then, what might else be  
Fusil or gray'n in mettle. After these, (wrought  
570 But on the hether side a different sort  
From the high neighbouring Hills, which was thir  
Down to the Plain descended: by thir guise (Seat,  
Just men they seemd, and all thir study bent  
To worship God aright, and know his works  
Not hid, nor those things lost which might preserve  
Freedom and Peace to men: they on the Plain  
Long had not walkt, when from the Tents behold  
A Beavie of fair Women, richly gay  
In Gems and wanton dress; to the Harp they sung  
580 Soft amorous Ditties, and in dance came on:  
The Men though grave, ey'd them, and let thir eyes  
Rove without rein, till in the amorous Net  
Fast caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose;  
And now of love they treat till th' Eevning Star  
Loves Harbinger appeerd; then all in heat  
They light the Nuptial Torch, and bid invoke  
Hymen, then first to marriage Rites invok't;  
With Feast and Musick all the Tents resound.  
Such happy interview and fair event  
590 Of love & youth not lost, Songs, Garlands, Flours,  
And

And charming Symphonies attach'd the heart  
Of *Adam*, soon enclin'd to admit delight,  
The bent of Nature; which he thus express'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,  
Much better seems this Vision, and more hope  
Of peaceful dayes portends, then those two past;  
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,  
Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus *Michael*. Judg. not what is best  
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end  
Holie and pure, conformatie divine.

Those Tents thou sawst so pleasant, were the Tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his Race  
Who slew his Brother; studious they appere  
Of Arts that polish Life, Inventers rare,  
Unmindful of thir Maker, though his Spirit  
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.  
Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget;  
For that fair femal Troop thou sawst, that seemd  
Of Goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all good wherein consists  
Womans domestic honour and chief praise;  
Bred onely and completed to the taste  
Of lustful appetence, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and trouble the Tongue, and reule the Eye.

To these that sober Race of Men, whose lives  
Religious titl'd them the Sons of God,  
Shall yeild up all thir vertue, all thir fame  
Ignibly, to the traines and to the smiles  
Of these fair Atheists, and now swim in joy,  
(Ere long to swim at larg) and laugh; for which

600

610

620

The

The world erelong a world of tears must weepe.

To whom thus *Adam* of short joy bereft.

O pittie and shaine, that they who to live well  
Enterd so faire, should turn aside to tread  
Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint !  
But still I see the tenor of Mans woe  
Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

630 From Mans effeminate slacknes it begins,  
Said th' Angel, who shoud better hold his place  
By wisdome, and superior gifts receavd.  
But now prepare thee for another Scene:

He lookd and saw wide Territorie spred  
Before him, Towns, and rural works between,  
Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Towns,  
Concourſ in Arms, fierce Faces threatning Warr,  
Giants of mightie Bone, and bould emprise ;  
Part wield thir Arms, part courb the foaming Steed,

640 Single or in Array of Battel rang'd  
Both Horse and Foot, nor idely mustring stood ;  
One way a Band select from forage drives  
A herd of Beeves, faire Oxen and faire Kine  
From a fat Meddow ground ; or fleecy Flock,  
Ewes and thir bleating Lambs over the Plaine,

Thir Bootie ; scarce with Life the Shepherds flye,  
But call in aide, which tacks a bloody Fray ;  
With cruel Tournament the Squadrons joine ;  
Where Cattel pastur'd late, now scattered lies

With Carcasses and Arms th' ensanguind Field  
Deserted ; Others to a Citie strong  
Lay Siege, encampt ; by Batterie, Scale, and Mine,  
Assaulting ; others from the Wall defend  
With Dart and Jav'lin, Stones and fulfurous Fire ;

On

On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.  
 In other part the scepter'd Haralds call  
 To Council in the Citie Gates : anon  
 Grey-headed men and grave, with Warriours mixt,  
 Assemble, and Harangues are heard, but soon  
 In factious opposition, till at last  
 Of middle Age one rising, eminent  
 In wise deport, spake much of Right and Wrong,  
 Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,  
 And Judgement from above : him old and young  
 Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands,  
 Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence  
 Unseen amid the throng : so violence  
 Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword-Law  
 Through all the Plain, and refuge none was found.  
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
 Lamenting turnd full sad ; O what are these,  
 Deaths Ministers, not Men, who thus deal Death  
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
 Ten thousand fould the sin of him who slew  
 His Brother ; for of whom such massac're  
 Make they but of thir Brethren, men of men ?  
 But who was that Just Man, whom had not Heav'n  
 Rescu'd, had in his Righteousness bin lost ?

To whom thus Michael ; These are the product  
 Of those ill-mated Marriages thou saw'st ;  
 Where good with bad were matcht, who of them  
 Abhor to joyn ; and by imprudence mixt, (selves  
 Produce prodigious Births of bodie or mind.  
 Such were these Giants, men of high renown ;  
 For in those dayes Might onely shall be admir'd,  
 And Valour and Heroic Vertu call'd ;

660

670

680

690

To overcome in Battel, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human Glorie, and for Glorie done  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great Conquerours,  
Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods,  
Destroyers rightlier call'd and Plagues of men.  
Thus Fame shall be achiev'd, renown on Earth,  
And what moist merits fame in silence hid.  
But heo the seventh from thee, whom thou beheldst  
The onely righteous in a World perverse,  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With Foes for daring single to be just,

700

And utter odious Truth, that God would come  
To judge them with his Saints: Him the most High  
Rapt in a balmie Cloud with winged Steeds  
Did, as thou sawst, receive, to walk with God  
High in Salvation and the Climes of bliss,  
Exempt from Death; to shew thee what reward  
Awaits the good, the rest what punishment;  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

He look'd, & saw the face of things quite chang'd;  
The brazen Throat of Warr had ceast to roar,  
710 All now was turn'd to jollirie and game,  
To luxurie and riot, feast and dance,  
Marrying or prostituting, as befell,  
Rape or Adulterie, where passing faire  
Allurd them; thence from Cups to civil Broiles.  
At length a Reverend Sire among them came,  
And of thir doings great dislike declar'd,  
And testif'd against thir wayes; hee oft  
Frequented thir Assemblies, whereso met,

Triumphs

Triumphs or Festivals, and to them preachd  
Conversion and Repentance, as to Souls

720

In prison under Judgements imminent :

But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd  
Contending, and remov'd his Tents farr off ;  
Then from the Mountain hewing Timber tall,  
Began to build a Vessel of huge bulk,  
Measur'd by Cubit, length, & breadth, and highth,  
Smeard round with Pitch, and in the side a dore  
Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large  
For Man and Beast : when loe a wonder strange !

Of everie Beast, and Bird, and Insect small  
Came seavens, and pairs, and enterd in, as taught  
Thir order ; last the Sire, and his three Sons  
With thir four Wives ; and God made fast the dore.

730

Meanwhile the Southwind rose, & with black wings  
Wide hovering, all the Clouds together drove  
From under Heav'n ; the Hills to their supplie  
Vapour, and Exhalation dusk and moist,  
Sent up amain ; and now the thick'nd Skie  
Like a dark Ceeling stood ; down rush'd the Rain  
Impetuous, and continu'd till the Earth  
No more was seen ; the floating Vessel swum  
Uplisted ; and secure with beaked prow  
Rode ti'ting o're the Waves, all dwellings else  
Flood overhelmd, and them with all thir pomp  
Deep under water rould ; Sea cover'd Sea,  
Sea without shoar ; and inthir Palaces

740

Where luxurie late reign'd, Sea-monsters whelp'd  
And stabl'd ; of Mankind, so numerous late,  
All left, in one sm'll bottom swum imbarke't.  
How didst thou grieve ther, *Adam*, to behöld

750

The end of all thy Offspring, end so sad,  
 Depopulation ; thee another Floud,  
 Of tears and sorrow a Floud thee also drown'd,  
 And sunk thee as thy Sons ; till gently reard  
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stoodst at last,  
 Though comfortless, as when a Father mourns  
 His Childern, all in view destroyd at once ;  
 And scarce to th' Angel utterdst thus thy plaint.

760 O Visions ill foreseen ! better had I  
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne  
 My part of evil onely, each dayes lot  
 Anough to bear ; those now, that were dispensest  
 The burd'n of many Ages, on me light  
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining Birth  
 Abottive, to torment me ere thir being,  
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall  
 Him or his Childern, evil he may be sure,  
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,  
 770 And hee the future evil shall no less  
 In apprehension then in substance feel  
 Grievous to bear : but that care now is past,  
 Man is not whom to warne : those few escap't  
 Famin and anguish will at last consume  
 Wandring that watrie Desert : I had hope  
 When violence was ceas't, and Warr on Earth,  
 All would have then gon well, peace would have  
 With length of happy days the race of man ; (crown'd  
 But I was farr deceav'd ; for now I see  
 780 Peace to corrupt no less then Warr to waste.  
 How comes it thus ? unfould, Celestial Guide,  
 And whether here the Race of man will end.

To

To whom thus *Michael*. Those whom last thou saw'st  
In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
And great exploits, but of true vertu void;  
Who having spilt much blood, and don much waste  
Subduing Nations, and achievd thereby  
Fame in the World, high titles, and rich prey,  
Shall change thir course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride  
Raise out of friendship hostil deeds to Peace.

The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by Warr  
Shall with thir freedom lost all vertu loose  
And feare of God, from whom thir pietie feign'd  
In sharp contest of Battel found no aide  
Against invaders; therefore could in zeale  
Thenceforth shall practice how to live secure,  
Worldlie or dissolute, on what thir Lords  
Shall leave them to enjoy; for th' Earth shall bear  
More then enough, that temperance may be tri'd:  
So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,  
Justice and Temperance, Truth and Faith forgot;  
One Man except, the onely Son of light  
In a dark Age, against example good,  
Against allurement, custom, and a World  
Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,  
Or violence, hee of thir wicked wayes  
Shall them admonish, and before them set  
The paths of righteousness, how much more safe,  
And full of peace, denouncing wrauth to come  
On thir impenitence; and shall returne  
Of them derided, but of God observ'd  
The one just Man alive; by his command

790

800

810

Shall

Shall build a wondrous Ark, as thou beheldst,  
To save himself and houshold from amidst  
A World devote to universal rack.

820 No sooner hee with them of Man and Beast  
Select for life shall in the Ark be lodg'd,  
And shelterd round, but all the Cataracts  
Of Heav'n set open on the Earth shall powre  
Raine day and night, all fountaines of the Deep  
Broke up, shall heave the Ocean to usurp  
Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise  
Above the highest Hills : then shall this Mount  
Of Paradise by might of Waves be moovd  
Out of his place, pushd by the horned floud,  
With all his verdure spoil'd, and Trees adrift  
Down the great River to the op'ning Gulf,  
830 And there take root an Iland salt and bare,  
The haunt of Seales and Orcs, and Sea-mews clang.  
To teach thee that God attributes to place  
No sanctitie, if none be thither brought  
By Men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
And now what further shall ensue, behold.

He lookd, and saw the Ark hull on the floud,  
Which now abated, for the Clouds were fled,  
Drivn by a keen North-winde, that blowing drie  
Wrinkl'd the face of Deluge, as decaid ;  
840 And the cleer Sun on his wide watrie Glass  
Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh Wave largely drew,  
As after thirst, which made thir flowing shrink  
From standing lake to tripping ebbe, that stole  
With soft foot towards the deep, who now had  
his sluices, as the Heav'n his windows shut. (stoppt  
The Ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground  
Fast

Fast on the top of som high mountain fixt.  
And now the tops of Hills as Rocks appeer ;  
With clamor thence the rapid Currents drive  
Towards the retreating Sea thir furious tyde.  
Forthwith from out the Arke a Raven flies,  
And after him, the surer messenger,  
A Dove sent forth once and agen to spie  
Green Tree or ground whereon his foot may light ;  
The second time returning, in his Bill  
An Olive leafe he brings, pacific signe :  
Anon drie ground appeers, and from his Arke  
The ancient Sire descends with all his Train ;  
Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,  
Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds  
A dewie Cloud, and in the Cloud a Bow  
Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
Betok'ning peace from God, and Cov'nant new.  
Whereat the heart of *Adam* erst so sad  
Greatly rejoyc'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

850

860

870

O thou that future things canst represent  
As present, Heav'ly instru<sup>c</sup>ter, I revive  
At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live  
With all the Creatures, and thir seed preserve.  
Farr less I now lament for one whole World  
Of wicked Sons destroyd, then I rejoice  
For one Man found so perfet and so just,  
That God voutsafes to raise another World  
From him, and all his anger to forget.  
But say, what mean those colourd streaks in Heavn,  
Distended as the Brow of God appeas'd,  
Or serve they as a flourie verge to binde  
The fluid skirts of that same wattrie Cloud,  
Least it again dissolve and shewr the Earth ?

To

To whom th' Archangel. Dextrously thou aim'st  
 880 So willingly doth God remit his ire,  
 Though late repenting him of Man deprav'd,  
 Griev'd at his heart, when looking down he saw  
 The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
 Corrupting each thirway ; yet those remov'd,  
 Such grace shall one just Man find in his sight,  
 That he relents, not to blot out mankind,  
 And makes a Covenant never to destroy  
 The Earth again by flood, nor let the Sea  
 Surpasse his bounds, nor Rain to drown the World  
 890 With Man therein or Beast ; but when he brings  
 Over the Earth a Cloud, will therein set  
 His triple-colour'd Bow, whereon to look  
 And call to mind his Cov'nant : Day and Night,  
 Seed time and Harvest, Heat and hoary Frost  
 Shall hold thir course, till fire purge all things new,  
 Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.  
 X Thus thou hast seen one World begin and end ;  
 And Man as from a second stock proceed.  
 Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive  
 900 Thy mortal sight to faile ; objects divine  
 Must needs impaire and wearie human sense :  
 Henceforth what is to com I will relate,  
 Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.  
 This second sours of Men, while yet but few,  
 And while the dread of judgement past remains  
 Fresh in thir mindes, fearing the Deitie,  
 With some regard to what is just and right  
 Shall lead thir lives, and multiply apace,  
 Labouring the soile, and reaping plenteous crop,  
 910 Corn wine and oyle ; and from the herd or flock,  
 Oft

Oft sacrificing Bullock, Lamb, or Kid,  
 With large Wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred Feast  
 Shal spend thir dayes in joy unblam'd, and dwell  
 Long time in peace by Families and Tribes  
 Under paternal rule ; till one shall rise  
 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content  
 With fair equalitie, fraternal state,  
 Will arrogate Dominion undeferv'd  
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
 Concord and law of Nature from the Earth ;  
 Hunting (and Men not Beasts shall be his game)  
 With Warr and hostile snare such as refuse  
 Subjection to his Empire tyrannous :

A mightig Hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heav'n,  
 Or from Heav'n claiming second Sovrantie ;  
 And from Rebellion shall derive his name,  
 Though of Rebellion others he accuse.

Hee with a crew, whom like Ambition joyns  
 With him or under him to tyrannize,

Marching from ~~Eden~~ towards the West, shall finde  
 The Plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
 Boiles out from under ground, the mouth of Hell ;  
 Of Brick, and of that stuff they cast to build  
 A Citie & Towre, whose top may reach to Heav'n ;  
 And get themselves a name, least far disperst  
 In foraign Lands thir memorie be lost,  
 Regardlesss whether good or evil fame.

But God who oft descends to visit men  
 Unseen, and through thir habitations walks  
 To mark thir doings, them beholding soon,  
 Comes down to see thir Citie, ere the Tower

920

930

940

Obstruct Heav'n Towns, and in derision sets  
Upon thir Tongues a various Spirit to rase  
Quite out thir Native Language, and instead  
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown :  
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud.

950 Among the Builders ; each to other calls  
Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,  
As mockt they storm ; great laughter was in Heav'n  
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange :  
And hear the din ; thus was the building left  
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion nam'd.

Whereto thus *Adam* fatherly displeas'd.

O execrable Son so to aspire  
Above his Brethren, to himself assuming  
Authoritie usurpt, from God not giv'n :  
He gave us onely over Beast, Fish, Fowl  
Dominion absolute ; that right we hold  
960 By his donation ; but Man over men  
He made not Lord ; such title to himself  
Reserving, human left from human free.  
But this Usurper his encroachment proud  
Stayes not on Man ; to God his Tower intends  
Siege and defiance : Wretched man ! what food  
Will he convey up thither to sustain  
Himself and his ralh Armie, where thin Aire  
Above the Clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
And famish him of Breath, if not of Bread ?

970 To whom thus *Michael*. Justly thou abhor'st  
That Son, who on the quiet state of men  
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
Rational Libertie ; yet know withall,  
Since thy original lapse, true Libertie

is lost, which alwayes with right Reason dwells  
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:  
 Reason in man obscur'd, or not obeyd,  
 Immediately inordinate desires  
 And upstart Passions catch the Government  
 From Reason, and to servitude reduce  
 Man till then free. Therefore since hee permits  
 Within himselfe unworthie Powers to reign  
 Over free Reason, God in Judgement just  
 Subjects him from without to violent Lords;  
 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
 His outward freedom: Tyrannie must be,  
 Though to the Tyrant thereby no excuse.  
 Yet somtimes Nations will decline so low  
 From vertue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
 But Justice, and some fatal curse annex  
 Deprives them of thir outward libertie,  
 Thir inward lost: Witnes th' irreverent Son  
 Of him who built the Ark, who for the shame  
 Don to his Father, heard this heavie curse,  
*Servant of Servants*, on his vicious Race.  
 Thus will this latter, as the former World,  
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last  
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
 His presence from among them, and avert  
 His holy Eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
 To leave them to thir own polluted wayes;  
 And one peculiar Nation to select  
 From all the rest, of whom to be invok'd,  
 A Nation from one faithful man to spring:  
 Him on this side *Euphrates* yet residing,  
 Bred up in idol-worship; O that men

980

990

1000

(Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
 While yet the Patriark liv'd, who scap'd the Flood,  
 As to forsake the living God, and fall  
 1010 To worship thir own work in Wood and Stone  
 For Gods! yet him God the most High voutsafes  
 To call by Vision from his Fathers house,  
 His kindred and false Gods, into a Land  
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise  
 A mightie Nation, and upon him shewre  
 His benediction so, that in his Seed  
 All Nations shall be blest; he straight obeys,  
 Not knowing to what Land, yet firm believes:  
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what Faith  
 1020 He leaves his Gods, his Friends, and native Soile  
 Ur of Chaldeas, passing now the Ford  
 To Haran, after him a cumbrous Train  
 Of Herds and Flocks, and numerous servitude;  
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth  
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.  
 Canaan he now attains, I see his Tents  
 Pitcht about Srechem, and the neighbouring Plaine  
 Of Moreb; there by promise he receaves  
 Gift to his Progenie of all that Land;  
 1030 From Hamath Northward to the Desert South  
 (Things by thir names I call, though yet unnam'd)  
 From Herman East to the great Western Serey  
 Mount Hermon, yonder Sea, each place beheld  
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shore  
 Mount Carmel; here the double-founted stream  
 Jordan, true limit Eastward; but his Serey  
 Shall dwell to Genez, that long ridge of Aillino with  
 This ponder, that all Nations of the Earth  
 Shall

Shall in his Seed be blessed ; by that Seed  
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise  
 The Serpents head ; whereof to thee anon  
 Plainlier shall be reveald. This Patriarch blest,  
 Whom *faithful Abraham* due time shall call,  
 A Son, and of his Son a Grand-childe leaves,  
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown ;  
 The Grandchilde with twelve Sons increast, departs  
 From *Canaan*, to a Land hereafter call'd  
*Egypt*, divided by the River *Nile* ;  
 See where it flows, disgorging at seaven mouthes  
 Into the Sea : to sojourn in that Land  
 He comes invited by a yonger Son  
 In time of dearth, a Son whose worthy deeds  
 Raise him to be the second in that Realme  
 Of *Pharao* : there he dies, and leaves his Race  
 Growing into a Nation, and now grown  
 Suspected to a sequent King, who seeks  
 To stop thir overgrowth, as inmate guests  
 Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them  
 Inhospitably, and kills this infant Males : (slaves  
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call  
*Moses* and *Aaron*) sent from God to claime  
 His people from enthralment, they return  
 With glory, and spoile back to thir promis'd Land,  
 But first the Lawles Tyrant, who denies  
 To know thir God, or mitlasse to regard,  
 Must be compell'd by Signes and Judgements dire ;  
 To blood bathed the Rivers must be turnd,  
 Frogz, Lice, and Flies must roul his Palace ;  
 With loath'd intrusion, and fist all the land ;  
 His Cattel must of Rot and Murrain die,

1040

1050

1060

1070

Botches.

Botches and blaines must all his flesh imbos,  
 And all his people's Thunder mixt with Haile,  
 Haile mixt with fire must rend th' *Egyptian* Skie  
 And wheel on th' Earth, devouring where it rouls;  
 What it devours not, Herb, or Fruit, or Graine,  
 A darksom Cloud of Locusts swarming down  
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green:  
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
 1080 Palpable darkness, and blot out three dayes;  
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born  
 Of *Egypt* must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds  
 This River-dragon tam'd at length submits  
 1090 To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as Ice  
 More hard'nd after thaw, till in his rage  
 Pursuing whom he late dismis'd, the Sea  
 Swallows him with his Host, but them lets pass  
 As on drie land between two christal walls,  
 Aw'd by the rod of *Moses*, so to stand  
 1100 Divided, till his rescu'd gain thir shoar:  
 Such wondrous power God to his Saint will lend,  
 Though present in his Angel, who shall goe  
 Before them in a Cloud, and Pillar of Fire,  
 By day a Cloud, by night a pillar of Fire,  
 To guide them in thir journey, and remove  
 Behinde them, while th' obdurat King pursues:  
 All night he will pursue, but his approach  
 1110 Darknes defends between till morning Watch;  
 Then through the Firey Pillar and the Cloud  
 God looking forth will trouble all his Host  
 And craze thir Chariot wheels: when by command  
*Moses* once more his potent Rod extends

Over

Over the Sea ; the Sea his Rod obeys ;  
 On thir imbatelld ranks the Waves return,  
 And overwhelm thir Warr : the Race elect  
 Safe towards *Canaan* from the shoar advance  
 Through the wilde Desert, not the readiest way,  
 Least entring on the *Canaanite* allarm'd  
 Warr terrifie them inexpert, and feare  
 Return them back to *Egypt*, chooing rather  
 Inglorious life with servitude; for life  
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
 Untrain'd in Armes, where rashnes leads not on.

This also shall they gain by thir delay  
 In the wide Wilderness, there they shall found  
 Thir government, and thir great Senate choose  
 Through the twelve Tribes, to rule by Laws ordain'd  
 God from the Mount of *Sinai*, whose gray top  
 Shall tremble, he descending, will himself  
 In Thunder Lightning and loud Trumpets sound  
 Ordaine them Lawes ; part such as appertaine  
 To civil Justice, part religious Rites

Of sacrifice, informing them, by types  
 And shadowes, of that destind Seed to bruise  
 The Serpent, by what meanes he shall achieve  
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God  
 To mortal eare is dreadful ; they beseech  
 That *Moses* might report to them his will,  
 And terror ceale ; he grants them thir desire,  
 Instructed that to God is no access  
 Without Mediator, whose high Office now  
*Moses* in figure beares, to introduce  
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,  
 And all the Prophets in thir Age the times.

1100

1120

1130

## Book 10. *Paradise lost.*

Of great *Messiah* shall sing. Thus Laws and Rites  
Establish'd, such delight hath God in Men  
Obedient to his will, that he voutsafes  
Among them to set up his Tabernacle,  
The holy One with mortal Men to dwell :  
1140 By his prescript a Sanctuary is fram'd  
Of Cedar, overlaid with Gold, therein  
An Ark, and in the Ark his Testimony,  
The Records of his Cov'nant, over these  
A Mercie-seat of Gold between the wings  
Of two bright Cherubim, before him burn  
Seaven Lamps as in a Zodiac representing  
The Heav'ly fires ; over the Tent a Cloud  
Shall rest by Day, a fierie gleame by Night,  
Save when they journie, and at length they come,  
1150 Conducted by his Angel to the Land  
Promisd to *Abraham* and his Seed : the rest  
Were long to tell, how many Battels fought,  
How many Kings destroyd, and Kingdoms won,  
Or how the Sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still  
A day entire, and Nights due course adjourne,  
Mans voice commanding, Sun in *Gibeon* stand,  
And thou Moon in the vale of *Asalon*,  
Till *Israel* overcome ; so call the third  
From *Abraham*, Son of *Isaac*, and from him  
1160 His whole descent, who thus shall *Canaan* win.  
Here *Adams* interpos'd. O sent from Heav'n,  
Enlightner of my darkness, gracious things  
Thou hast reveald, those chiefly which concerne  
Just *Abraham* and his Seed : now first I finde  
Mine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,  
Erwhile perplext with thoughts what would becom  
Of

Of mee and all Mankind ; but now I see  
His day, in whom all Nations shall be blest,  
Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
Forbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.  
This yet I apprehend not, whyto those  
Among whom God will deigne to dwell on Earth  
So many and so various Laws are giv'n ;  
So many Laws argue so many sins  
Among them ; how can God with such refide ?

To whom thus *Michael*. Doubt not but that sin  
Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;  
And therefore was Law given them to evince  
Thir natural pravitié, by stirring up  
Sin against Law to fight ; that when they see  
Law ~~can~~ discover sin, but not remove ,  
Save by those shadowie expiations weak,  
The bloud of Bulls and Goats, they may conclude  
Some bloud more precious must be paid for Man,  
Just for unjust, that in such righteousness  
To them by Faith imputed, they may finde  
Justification towards God, and peace  
Of Conscience, which the Law by Ceremonies  
Cannot appease, nor Man the moral part  
Perform, and not performing cannot live.  
So Law appears imperfet, and but giv'n  
With purpose to resign them in full time  
Up to a better Cov'nant, disciplin'd  
From shadowie Types to Truth, from Flesh to Spirit,  
From imposition of strict Laws, to free  
Acceptance of large Grace, from servil fear  
To filial, works of Law to works of Faith.  
And therefore shall not *Moses*, though of God

1200 Highly belov'd, being but the Minister  
Of Law, his people into *Canaan* lead ;  
But *Joshua* whom the Gentiles *Jesus* call,  
His Name and Office bearing, who shall quell  
The adversarie Serpent, and bring back  
Through the worlds wilderness long wander'd man  
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
Meanwhile they in thir earthly *Canaan* plac't  
Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
National interrupt thir public peace,  
Provoking God to raise them enemies :  
1210 From whom as oft he saves them penitent  
By Judges first, then under Kings ; of whom  
The second, both for pietie renownd  
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
Irrevocable, that his Regal Throne  
For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing  
All Prophecie, That of the Royal Stock  
Of *David* (so I name this King) shall rise  
A Son, the Womans Seed to thee foretold,  
Foretold to *Abraham*, as in whom shall trust  
1220 All Nations, and to Kings foretold, of Kings  
The last, for of his Reign shall be no end.  
But first a long succession must ensue,  
And his next Son for Wealth and Wisdom fam'd  
The clouded Ark of God till then in Tents  
Wandring, shall in a glorious Temple estirne.  
Such follow him, as shall be register'd  
Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scowle,  
Whose foul Idolatries, and other faults  
Heapt to the popular summe, will so incense  
God, as to leave them, and expose thir Land,

Thir Citie, his Temple, and his holy Ark  
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
 To that proud Citie, whose high Walls thou saw'st  
 Left in confusio[n], *Babylon* thence call'd.

There in captivitie he lets them dwell  
 The space of seventie years, then brings them back,  
 Rememb'ring mercie, and his Cov'nant sworn  
 To *David*, stablish'd as the dayes of Heav'n.

Returnd from *Babylon* by leave of Kings

Thir Lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God 1240  
 They first re-edifie, and for a while

In mean estate live moderate, till grown  
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow ;  
 But first among the Priests' dissension springs,  
 Men who attend the Altar, and should most  
 Endeavour Peace : thir strife pollution brings  
 Upon the Temple it self : at last they seise  
 The Scepter, and regard not *David's* Sons,  
 Then loose it to a stranger, that the true  
 Anointed King *Meshiah* might be born

Bar'd of his right ; yet at his Birth a Starr  
 Unseen before in Heav'n proclaims him com,  
 And guides the Eastern Sages, who enquire  
 His place, to offer Incense, Myrrh, and Gold ;  
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells

To simple Shepherds, keeping watch by night ;  
 They gladly thither haste, and by a Quire  
 Of squadron'd Angels hear his Carol sung.

A Virgin is his Mother, but his Sire  
 The Power of the most High ; he shall ascend  
 The Throne hereditarie, and bound his Reign  
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns.

He ceas'd, discerning *Adam* with such joy  
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief bin dew'd in tears,  
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.

O Prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
 Of utmost hope! now clear I understand  
 What oft my steddiest thoughts have searcht in  
 Why our great expectation should be call'd (vain,  
 The seed of Woman: Virgin Mother, Haile,  
 High in the love of Heav'n, yet from my Loynes  
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy Womb the Son  
 Of God most High; So God with man unites:  
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
 Expect with mortal paine: say where and when  
 Thir fight, what stroke shall bruise the *Victor's* heel.

To whom thus *Michael*. Dream not of thir fight,  
 As of a Duel, or the local wounds  
 Of head or heel: not therefore joynes the Son  
 1280 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil  
 Thy enemie; nor so is overcome  
*Satan*, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,  
 Disabl'd not to give thee thy deaths wound:  
 Which hee, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
 Not by destroying *Satan*, but his works  
 In thee and in thy Seed: nor can this be,  
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
 Obedience to the Law of God, impos'd  
 On penaltie of death, and suffering death,  
 1290 The penaltie to thy transgression due,  
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:  
 So onely can high Justice rest appaid.  
 The Law of God exact he shall fulfill  
 Both by obedience and by love, though love

Alone

Alone fulfill the Law ; thy punishment  
 He shall endure by coming in the Flesh  
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,  
 Proclaiming Life to all who shall believe  
 In his redemption, and that his obedience  
 Imputed becomes theirs by Faith, his merits  
 To save them, not thir own, though legal works.  
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,  
 Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condamnd  
 A shameful and accurst, nail'd to the Cross  
 By his own Nation, slaine for bringing Life ;  
 But to the Cross he nailes thy Enemies,  
 The Law that is against thee, and the sins  
 Of all mankinde, with him there crucifi'd,  
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust  
 In this his satisfaction ; so he dies,  
 But soon revives, Death over him no power  
 Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light  
 Returne, the Starres of Morn shall see him rise  
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
 Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems,  
 His death for Man, as many as offerd Life  
 Neglect not, and the benefit imbrace  
 By Faith not void of works : this God-like act  
 Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd,  
 In sin for ever lost from life ; this act  
 Shall bruise the head of *Satan*, crush his strength  
 Defeating Sin and Death, his two maine armes,  
 And fix farr deeper in his head thir stings  
 Then temporal death shall bruise the Victors ~~bel~~,  
 Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,  
 A gentle wafting to immortal Life.

1300

1310

1320

Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
Longer on Earth then certaine times to appear.

To his Disciples, Men who in his Life

1330 Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge  
To teach all nations what of him they learn'd  
And his Salvation, them who shall beleeve  
Baptizing in the profluent streame, the signe  
Of washing them from guile of sin to Life  
Pur'e, and in-mind prepar'd, if so befall,  
For death, like that which the redeemer dy'd.  
All Nations they shall teach; for from that day  
Not onely to the Sons of *Abraham* Loynes  
Salvation shall be Preacht, but to the Sons

1340 Of *Abraham's* Faith, wherever through the world;  
So in his seed all Nations shall be blest.

Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend  
With victory, triumphing through the aire  
Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise  
The Serpent, Prince of aire, and drag in Chaines  
Through all his realme, & there confounded leave;  
Then enter into glory, and resume

His Seat at Gods right hand, exalted high.

Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,  
When this worlds dissolution shall be ripe,  
With glory and power to judge both quick & dead,  
To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward  
His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
Whether in Heav'n or Earth, for then the Earth  
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
Then this of *Eden*, and far happiest daies.

So spake th' Archangel *Michael*, then paus'd,  
As at the World's great period; and our Sire

Replete

Replete with joy and wonder thus repli'd.

O goodness infinite, goodness immense !

1360

That all this good of evil shall produce,

And evil turn to good ; more wonderful

Then that which by creation first brought forth

Light out of darkness ! full of doubt I stand,

Whether I should repent me now of sin

By mee done and occasiond, or rejoice

Much more, that much more good thereof shall

To God more glory, more good will to Men (spring,

From God, and over wrauth grace shall abound.

But say, if our deliverer up to Heav'n

1370

Must reaseend, what will betide the few

His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,

The enemies of truth ; who then shall guide

His people, who defend ? will they not deale

Worf with his followers then with him they dealt ?

Be sure they will, said th' Angels; but from Heav'n

Hee to his own a Comforter will send,

The promise of the Father, who shall dwell

His Spirit within them, and the Law of Faith

Working through love, upon thir hearts shall write,

To guide them in all truth, and also arme

With spiritual Armour, able to resist

Satans assaults, and quench his fierie darts,

What Man can do against them, not affraid,

Though to the death, against such cruelties

With inward consolations recompenct,

And oft supported so as shall attaze

Thir proudest persecutors : for the Spirit

Powrd first on his Apostles, whom he sends

To evangelize the Nations, then on all

1380

Baptiz'd,

1390

Baptiz'd, shall them with wondrous gifts endue  
 To speak all Tongues, and do all Miracles,  
 As did thir Lord before them. Thus they win  
 Great numbers of each Nation to receave  
 With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n: at length  
 Thir Ministry perform'd, and race well run,  
 Thir doctrine and thir story written left,  
 They die; but in thir room, as they forewarne,  
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous Wolves,  
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heav'n  
 1400 To thir own vile advantages shall turne  
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth  
 With superstitions and traditions taint,  
 Left onely in those written Records pure,  
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,  
 Places and titles, and with these to joine  
 Secular power, though feigning still to act  
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating  
 1410 The Spirit of God, promisd alike and giv'n  
 To all Beleevers; and from that pretense,  
 Spiritual Lawes by carnal power shall force  
 On every conscience; Laws which noe shall finde  
 Left them inround, or what the Spirit within  
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
 But force the Spirit of Grace it self, and binde  
 His consort Libertie; what, but unbuild  
 His living Temples, built by Faith to stand,  
 Thir own Faith not anothers: for on Earth  
 1420 Who against Faith and Conscience can be heard  
 Infallible? yet many will presume:  
 Whence heavie persecution shall arise

On all who in the worship persevere  
 Of Spirit and Truth; the rest, farr greater part,  
 Will deem in outward Rites and specious formes  
 Religion satisfi'd; Truth shall retire  
 Bestuck with flandrous darts, and works of Faith  
 Rarely be found: so shall the World goe on,  
 To good malignant, to bad men benigne,  
 Under her own waight groaning, till the day  
 Appeer of respiration to the just,  
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
 Of him so lately promiss'd to thy aid,  
 The Womans seed; obscurely then foretold,  
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord;  
 Last in the Clouds from Heav'a to be reveald  
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
*Satan* with his perverted World; then raise  
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
 New Heav'ns, new Earth, Ages of endlesse date  
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love,  
 To bring forth fruits Joy and eternal Bliss.

He ended 3, and thus *Adam* last reply'd.  
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
 Measur'd this transient World, the Race of time,  
 Tilltime stand fixt: beyond is all abyss,  
 Eternitie, whose end no eye can reach.  
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,  
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill  
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can containe;  
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire.  
 Henceforth I learne, that to obey is best,  
 And love with feare the onely God, to walk  
 As in his presence, ever to observe.

1430

1440

1450

His providence, and on him sole depend,  
Merciful oyer all his works, with good  
Still overcoming evil, and by small  
Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
1460 By simply meek ; that suffering for Truths sake  
Is fortitude to highest victorie,  
And to the faithful Death the Gate of Life ;  
Taught this by his example whom I now  
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also th' Angel last repli'd :  
This having learnt, thou hast attaind the summe  
Of wisdom ; hope no higher, though all the Starrs  
Thou knewst by name, and all th' ethereal Powers,  
All secrets of the deep, all Natures works,  
1470 Or works of God in Heav'n, Air, Earth, or Sea,  
And all th' riches of this World enjoydst,  
And all the rule, one Empire ; onely add  
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add Faith,  
Add Vertue, Patience, Temperance, add Love,  
By name to come call'd Charitie, the soul  
Of all the rest : then wilt thou not be loath  
To leave this Paradise, but shalt posseſſ  
A Paradise within thee, happier farr.  
Let us descend now therefore from this top  
1480 Of Speculation ; for the hour precise  
Exacts our parting hence ; and see the Guards,  
By mee encampt on yonder Hill, expect  
Thir motion, at whose Front a flaming Sword,  
In signal of remove, waves fiercely round ;  
We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ;  
Her also I with gentle Dreams have calm'd

Portending

Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd  
 To meek submission : thou at season fit  
 Let her with thee partake what thou haft heard,  
 Chiefly what may concern her Faith to know,  
 The great deliverance by her Seed to come  
 (For by the Womans Seed) on all Mankind.  
 That ye may live, which will be many dayes,  
 Both in one Faith unanimous though sad,  
 With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happie end.

He ended, and they both descend the Hill;  
 Descended, *Adam* to the Bowre where *Eve*  
 Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak't ;  
 And thus with words not sad she him receav'd.

Whence thou returnst, & whither wentst, I know ;  
 For God is also in sleep, and Dreams advise,  
 Which he hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Presaging, since with sorrow and hearts distress  
 VVearied I fell asleep : but now lead on ;  
 In mee is no delay ; with thee to gge,  
 Is to stay here ; without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to mee  
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou,  
 VVho for my wilful crime art banisht hence.  
 This further consolation yet secure  
 I carry hence ; though all by mee is lost,  
 Such favour I unworthie am voutsaf't,  
 By mee the Promis'd Seed shall all restore.

So spake our Mother *Eve*, and *Adam* heard  
 VWell pleas'd, but answer'd not ; for now too nigh  
 Th' Archangel stood, and from the other Hill  
 To thir fixt Station, all in bright array.

The

1490

1500

1510

1520 The Cherubim descended ; on the ground  
Gliding meteorous, as Ev'ning Mist  
Ris'n from a River o're the marshy glides,  
And gathers ground fast at the Labourers heel  
Homeward returning. High in Front advanc't,  
The brandish't Sword of God before them blaz'd  
Fierce as a Comet ; which with torrid heat,  
And vapour as the *Libyan* Air adust,  
Began to parch that temperate Clime ; whereat  
In either hand the hastning Angel caught  
Our lingring Parents, and to th' Eastern Gate  
1530 Led them direct, and down the Cliff as fast  
To the subiected Plaine ; then disappear'd.  
They looking back, all th' Eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise, so late thir happie seat,  
Wav'd over by that flaming Brand, the Gate  
With dreadful Faces throng'd and fierie Armes :  
Som natural tears they drop'd, but wip'd them soon,  
The World was all before them, where to choose  
Thir place of rest, and Providence thir guide :  
They hand in hand with wandring steps and slow,  
1540 Through *Eden* took thir solitarie way.

**THE END.**

